



For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

Chapter 1

The story begins on the day Rebaone made a big sacrifice for her sister, Resego. The day she agreed to make her parents happy. It was in the afternoon when Rebaone was just watching TV. Her parents, Bridget and Thapelo joined her in the living room.

...

[REBAONE]

Mom and dad are here. They are probably here to talk about my marriage. This has been going on for months and I am tired. I don't want to be anyone's wife, I am just Twenty years old and I have a boyfriend.

I looked at my mother and just kept quiet. I wish that I was able to read her mind. She wants to say something to me but she doesn't know how to start.

...

Bridget: Hey, baby.

Me: Hey, mom.

Bridget: Your father and I...

Me: ... are here to talk about my marriage.

Thapelo: We have come to a conclusion.

Me: I am listening.

Thapelo: You won't be his wife.

Me: Whose wife?

Bridget: Kaden's wife.

Me: (Smiles) Are you serious? Wow, I am so happy.

Bridget: You won't be happy after hearing what we have to say to you.

...

Okay, what are they talking about? Why won't I be happy after hearing what they want to say? What are they up to?

...

Me: What's going on?

Bridget: Resego will be Kaden's wife.

...

I am so shocked. Resego is only Eighteen years old. What does she know about being a wife? Why are our parents doing this? Are they doing this for money? I am also not ready to be anyone's wife so how can my little sister be someone's wife? This is not okay.

...

Me: Dad, what is your wife saying?

Thapelo: She's right. If you don't want to be Kaden's wife we will make sure that our other daughter...

...

I interrupted him before he could even finish talking. How can I listen to rubbish? Are these people crazy?

...

Me: Dad, keep quiet. Resego is still very young and she's doing Grade 12 this year. How can you talk about her marriage? Why are you blackmailing me?

...

Thapelo: It's you or Resego. You decide.

...

I kept quiet. I felt like punching my parents. How can they do this to me? This is blackmail and I don't like it at all. How can I allow Resego to get married? No!!!

...

Thapelo: Speak up. We don't have the whole day.

...

I looked at my mother and she decided to look away. What kind of a mother is she?

...

Me: Mom, you are a woman and you should side with me.

Bridget: Don't be such a baby, what's wrong with Kaden? Aren't you a woman? Can't you handle him?

Me: How do I handle someone I don't even know? I don't know him.

Bridget: You will meet him very soon.

Me: Look at me, mom. Why are you not looking at me?

Bridget: Why should I look at you?

Me: Mom, look at me and see how hurt I am.

Thapelo: There's no need to emotionally blackmail your mother. You have four hours to decide.

...

My controlling father got up and left. I was shattered but I didn't want to cry.

...

Me: Mom, please look at me.

Bridget: You have four hours.

Me: Mom, I have a boyfriend and I love him.

Bridget: Dump him.

Me: Just like that?

Bridget: He's not good for you.

Me: How?

Bridget: Kaden is the man for you. You will meet him tomorrow.

Me: I don't want to.

Bridget: Then Resego will pay for your mistake. Is that what you want?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Bridget: I thought as much.

Me: No wonder you are a housewife. You don't have brains and you don't deserve to work with anyone. Your husband will always control you because you are stupid.

...

My mom turned around and slapped me. Maybe I deserved that. I was mean but the truth is I am hurt that's why I was mean to her.

I got up and went to my room. I cried my eyes out.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

[BIANCA]

I can't believe that my boyfriend agreed to marry someone else other than me. How can he forget that he loves me? Why is he always allowing his stupid parents to run his life? I am so angry and heartbroken.

...

Me: Kaden, stop going up and down. You are irritating me.

Kaden: Watch your mouth, girl.

Me: I... I am sorry.

Kaden: I told you the truth, you should be happy.

Me: Are you telling me to be happy, Kaden? For what? You are not marrying me. Do you even know why you are getting married?

Kaden: Good question.

Me: You don't know, do you?

...

He sat down next to me and shook his stupid head. How can he agree to marry someone else just like that? Doesn't he love me?

...

Kaden: Babe, I... My parents will tell me when the time is right. I don't know why they are forcing me to marry someone else but I trust them.

Me: Jaden is single, why not him?

Kaden: I am also single. I am not married.

Me: Kaden, you know exactly what I am talking about. Don't act foolish.

Kaden: Did you just call me a fool?

Me: No... I...

...

As always, he strangled me. Tears fell off my eyes as I tried to remove his hand from my neck.

...

Kaden: You seem to have a big mouth nowadays. You must learn to respect me. I am your boyfriend and I rule this relationship. Got that?

...

I nodded. I am really scared of this guy but I love him and I will never leave him.

He let go of my neck and kissed me.

...

Kaden: (Smiles) What do you have to say now?

Me: I am sorry.

Kaden: (Smiles) Good girl. Wipe away your tears. Big girls don't cry. Am I right or wrong?

Me: You are right.

Kaden: What else can you tell Kaden Jones?

Me: Kaden Jones is always right.

Kaden: (Smiles) Good girl. I have to go. I will see you soon.

Me: Okay.

Kaden: I love you so much.

Me: I love you too.

...

He kissed my cheek, got up and left.

I don't know who Kaden is marrying but I know that it's the daughter of his father's friend. I need to see this girl before she gives in. I will know her and find her at any cost.

...

[RESEGO]

My sister's classes ended at 12:00 so where is she? I just got home from school and I can't find her anywhere. I need to show her my assignment, she helped me with it and I got good marks. Where is she?

I saw Bridget by the poolside and went to her.

...

Me: Hey, Bridget.

Bridget: Do you hate me that much, honey?

Me: What are you talking about?

Bridget: I am your mother. You stopped calling me "Mom, or mommy or mother" early last year. What happened to you? How can you just continue to call me by my name?

Me: Bridget, you don't deserve to be called a mother. Now stop your drama and tell me where my sister is.

Bridget: The last time I checked she was in her room.

Me: She's not there.

Bridget: Call her.

Me: Whatever. Bye.

Bridget: Don't speak to me like that. Where is my son?

Me: I am not Thuso's keeper.

...

I didn't give Bridget another chance to speak. I just walked away. Mother my foot. That woman would do anything for money. Her husband is the worst. They are already rich so what more do they want? I really don't like them.

I went to my room and called my sister but she didn't pick up the phone so I decided to take a nap.

...

[THAPELO]

My mind is made up. If Rebaone refuses to be Kaden's wife then Resego will be Kaden's wife. I can't lose money because of Rebaone. She's Twenty years old. She's ready for marriage. She should stop using emotional blackmail on us. We are doing everything for them.

...

Denis: Did your daughter agree? You haven't answered me.

Me: Denis my friend, my daughter will agree. Don't worry about anything.

Denis: We are running out of time.

...

My daughter did not agree but I know that she will agree to make her parents happy and also sacrifice for Resego. How can she not agree? She loves us. I know that she is going to agree. She doesn't even have a choice. She feels like I am forcing her to get married but she will be fine. Kaden will be good to her.

To be continued...

2

[THAPELO]

Me: Well... Don't worry. Everything is under control. She will agree in few hours.

Denis: Are you sure?

Me: She doesn't have a choice.

Denis: (Smiles) I trust you. You are a man of your word.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. Where are your children?

Denis: I don't know. My wife is also not around.

Me: Is Kaden okay with everything?

Denis: He's not okay but he can never let me down. He trusts me with all his heart. He does not have a choice. He will have to marry your daughter.

Me: (Smiles) We are doing this for their future.

Denis: That's true.

Me: Why didn't you ask Jaden to marry my daughter? He's not in a relationship and Kaden is in a relationship.

Denis: Jaden? (Laughs) You are funny.

Me: Is he that bad?

Denis: Very bad. Don't get me wrong, he's a good son but he is living his own life in his own world. He's too good and he doesn't support so many things I do.

Me: Mhmm, I see.

...

Kaden walked in. I am always happy to see him because there's nothing he wouldn't do for his father unlike my stubborn daughter, Rebaone.

...

Kaden: Mr Mogale... Wow, what a pleasant surprise.

Me: (Smiles) Hey, son. How are you?

...

I got up and hugged him.

...

Kaden: I am fine, thanks. When am I meeting your daughter?

Me: (Smiles) Tomorrow.

Kaden: (Smiles) That's great.

Denis: Kaden, please make sure that she doesn't find out that you have a girlfriend.

Me: Yes, your father is right. Don't mention your girlfriend to my daughter.

Kaden: Okay, no problem. Did she agree to be my wife?

Me: Not yet but...

...

My phone started ringing and I looked at Denis.

...

Denis: What's going on?

Me: It's my daughter, Rebaone. I knew that she would get back to me. Let me get this.

Denis: (Smiles) Great. Do you mind activating the loudspeaker?

Me: I'll do that.

...

I answered the phone and activated the loudspeaker.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Me: Reba...

Rebaone: Dad, why do you want me to get married to someone who is already in a relationship?

Me: Huh?

Rebaone: You heard me. I am with Kaden's girlfriend right now and she told me everything.

Me: A girlfriend? That's impossible. Kaden is single.

Rebaone: Are you telling me that Bianca is lying to me?

Me: Who is Bianca?

Rebaone: Kaden's girlfriend. Don't act surprised. You know that Kaden and Bianca are in a relationship.

Me: The person you are with is lying to you. She must be an enemy.

Rebaone: And you are a cunning man.

...

She hung up before I could even say something. This is not good at all. Kaden must take care of his stupid girlfriend.

I looked at Denis.

...

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: This is not good.

Denis: I know. Kaden, you must take care of this. Bianca will ruin everything.

Kaden: I can't believe that she did this. I will sort her out.

Denis: I think that you should end your relationship with her.
It's going to cost us.

Kaden: I will see what I can do. I have to go.

...

He got up and left. He should fix things. We just took five steps backwards and it's not good at all.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[KADEN]

I had to teach Bianca a lesson. Why does she have a big mouth?
How can she simply forget that I rule our relationship? Now
look at her, she's bleeding because of her big mouth.

...

Me: Bianca, you made me hit you. You should stop provoking
me.

...

She is quiet. She is in tears but how dare she ignore me? Who
does she think she is?

...

Me: Okay, this relationship is over. It's what you want, right?

Bianca: No.

Me: Speak up and stop crying. I hate tears. Big girls don't cry.

...

She wiped away her tears and got up from the floor.

...

Bianca: I... I... I am sorry, babe. Please don't end our relationship.

Me: Are you sure that you want to be with me?

Bianca: Yes.

Me: Come here.

...

She came closer and sat on my laps. I must admit that she looks scared and this is what I wanted.

...

Me: Promise me that you are going to be a good girl.

Bianca: But she's too beautiful. You are going to fall in love with her.

Me: Who?

Bianca: Rebaone.

Me: (Smiles) Is she more beautiful than you?

Bianca: Yes, she is.

Me: It's good to be honest. Well, don't worry. I am only yours.

Bianca: Do you promise?

Me: Yes, I do.

Bianca: But you are going to share a bedroom with her after marrying her.

Me: So?

Bianca: Uhm... Please don't touch her.

Me: Are you telling me what to do?

Bianca: No... I... I just don't want you to...

Me: Bianca, don't tell me what to do. I will touch her if I want to touch her and I will even make love to her if I want to. Don't tell me what to do.

...

She kept quiet. Who does she think she is? I am not like Jaden. No girl tells me what to do. I do what I want and my word is final in a relationship.

...

Me: I have to go now. Tell your mother that you fell off the stairs, okay?

Bianca: Okay, babe.

Me: I love you, don't forget that.

Bianca: (Smiles) Okay.

Me: I'll see you tomorrow before meeting my so called wife to be.

Bianca: Okay, no problem.

Me: Be a good girl and don't trouble me. Got that?

Bianca: Yeah.

To be continued...

3

[RESEGO]

My sister is finally home and she doesn't look good at all. I think that she drank alcohol. She can barely stand straight. Thapelo and Bridget must have said or done something to her.

...

Me: Reba, where have you been?

Rebaone: (Laughs) Why does it matter? I am getting married.

Me: What do you mean by that?

Bridget: She's getting married. Why do you act like you don't understand anything?

Me: Did you agree, sister?

Rebaone: (Laughs) Forced marriage.

Thapelo: Thuso and Resego, go to your room.

Thuso: Okay, daddy.

...

Thuso went to his room but I am not going anywhere. I won't let this heartless man tell me what to do.

...

Me: I am not going anywhere. I am Eighteen years old and I don't want to be ordered around by you.

Rebaone: Mr and Mrs Commander. Oh God, what have I done to deserve such parents? They are forcing me to get married at the age of Twenty.

Me: You have the right to say No.

Rebaone: Do you know what the consequences of that are?

Me: No, did they threaten you?

Thapelo: We didn't threaten her.

Me: Thapelo Mogale, I am not talking to you. I am talking to my sister.

Bridget: Resego, you are so disrespectful. Watch how you talk to your father.

Thapelo: It looks like she forgot how warm my slap is.

Rebaone: Sego, your parents told me that you will be Kaden's wife if I don't agree to be Kaden's wife. How can I allow that?

Me: They were just scaring you. They wouldn't do that.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Are you acting like you don't know what your parents are capable of? Stop it. I will get married, it's fine.

Me: But you have a boyfriend.

Rebaone: He was arrested today.

Me: WHAT???

Rebaone: Your parents are behind everything. I was in my room when a reliable source called me and told me that my boyfriend was arrested. I left the house without saying anything to your mother. I couldn't help my boyfriend. I am useless.

Me: No sister, don't say that. You are not useless.

Rebaone: I am. Bongani was arrested because of my stubbornness. Our parents are behind everything.

...

I looked at Bridget. Tears falling off my face, I spoke.

...

Me: What kind of a mother are you? Can't you see your own daughter's pain?

Bridget: We are doing everything for your future.

Me: Did we ask you to do something for our future? Don't we have limbs? Can't we do things for ourselves?

Thapelo: Resego, you are just a child. You don't know anything but one day you will thank us when you are multi-billionaires.

Me: Why is everything always about money? Who said that we want to be multi-billionaires?

Bridget: Resego, just keep quiet. I was also Twenty years of age when I got married. Look at me now. I am still with my husband and I still love him.

Me: You were not forced to get married. This is different.

Rebaone: Seggo, you don't have to waste your energy by talking to your parents. I will get married, I have been defeated. I will do this for you and for my boyfriend.

Thapelo: (Smiles) Good. I will get your boyfriend released by tomorrow morning.

Bridget: Kaden is coming here tomorrow, don't go to Campus.

Rebaone: Whatever makes you sleep at night, mother.

Bridget: Why are you saying that? I am not a bad person.

Me: Tell that to someone who cares, Bridget. Reba, let me take you to your room.

Thapelo: Wait.

Me: What?

Thapelo: Rebaone, who is Bianca?

Rebaone: (Laughs) Bianca is Kaden's girlfriend and guess what? She called me an hour ago and told me that she lied to me. She changed the entire story.

Me: Bianca? What's going on

Advertisement

Reba?

Rebaone: I decided to go to this other liquor house after leaving the police station and some girl by the name Bianca came to me and told me everything about Kaden. She told me that Kaden is an animal and he's her boyfriend. I was not surprised when the girl changed the story an hour ago.

Me: Why?

Rebaone: Isn't it obvious? Your father must have threatened her. Where else did she get my phone number?

Thapelo: I don't know what you are talking about. I didn't give her your number and I didn't threaten her. I don't even know her.

Me: Wicked man, keep quiet.

...

I took my sister to her room.

...

[THE NEXT DAY]

[REBAONE]

I just finished getting ready for my meeting with Kaden and I must say that I look so beautiful.

My mother came to my room.

...

Me: What do you want?

Bridget: Good morning to you too. Wow, you look beautiful.

Me: I am always beautiful.

Bridget: (Smiles) Kaden and his parents are here.

Me: Couldn't they come here at 15:00? It's still 11:00.

Bridget: Resego will be back by then. We don't want her to ruin our day with her big mouth.

Me: Whatever, mom. Is Bongani free?

Bridget: Yes. You can even call him.

Me: He's not taking my calls, all thanks to your husband.

Bridget: Baby, Bongani is not the one for you. He's a coward. There's nothing Kaden would not do for you.

Me: (Laughs) Wow.

Bridget: Don't say anything about Bongani. Let's go.

Me: Sure, Mrs Commander.

Bridget: Be nice.

Me: Whatever.

...

We went downstairs. Wow, Kaden is really handsome but who cares? Looks can be deceiving. I still believe what Bianca said to me but what can I do now? I have been defeated. My parents are capable of anything and the truth is I don't want anything bad to happen to Resego or to my boyfriend, Bongani.

I greeted everyone and sat down.

...

Mavis: Reba, please take Kaden to your room.

Me: Huh? My room? For what?

Thapelo: To talk, honey. What are you thinking about?

...

I faked my smile and nodded.

Me: Let's go, Kaden.

Kaden: (Smiles) After you, beautiful.

We went to my room and sat down on the couch.

Me: Are you comfortable?

Kaden: (Smiles) Yes I am. How can I not be comfortable when I am with a stunning lady like you? Your beauty is out of this world.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. You are also not bad. You are handsome but the truth is I don't care about the looks. I care about the heart.

Kaden: What do you mean?

Me: A heart can give only two things - Love and Hate. What does yours give?

Kaden: [This girl is preaching to me. What does she know about Love and Hate? I think that she's going to be trouble. She's going to be worse than Bianca. It's true that she's too beautiful but I don't like how she thinks she's smarter than me. I am Kaden Jones and my word is always final in a relationship.]

Me: Why are you quiet, Kaden?

Kaden: (Smiles) Uhm... Well... I have never met someone who is smart like you. I am so impressed.

Me: (Smiles) thank you.

Kaden: My heart gives only love. I am not able to hate people. It's not in me.

Me: Were you also forced to marry me?

To be continued...

4

[KADEN]

I can't read minds so I don't know what this girl is thinking. Was I also forced to marry her? Uhm... Yes, I was but how do I know what answer she wants to hear? I don't want to ruin things for our parents. What do I say?

...

Rebaone: Kaden?

Me: Huh?

Rebaone: Please answer the question.

Me: Uhm... What matters is that we are getting married. Forget about the rest.

Rebaone: And Bianca?

Me: Who is that?

Rebaone: Your girlfriend, Kaden.

Me: My girlfriend? I don't have a girlfriend. Who is Bianca? Have you met her?

Rebaone: Let's leave it. It's okay. You look like a good person. You were obviously forced to marry me but don't worry, everything is going to be fine.

...

Oh wow, well done Mr Jones. You didn't have to say a lot. This girl already believes you. Are you a good person, Mr Kaden Jones?

...

Rebaone: Why are you smiling?

Me: You make me smile. You are so nice to me.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Well, I am nice to those who are nice to me.

Me: (Smiles) Can we get married already?

Rebaone: (Giggles) Are you that impatient?

Me: Well, have you seen yourself? You are so beautiful. I can't wait to marry you and make love to you everyday.

Rebaone: What?

Me: Uhm... I... I am sorry. I didn't mean it like that.

Rebaone: [Oh my God, why didn't I think about this? Marriage? Sex? No, no, no. I am not ready to have sex with this guy. I am still a virgin and I...]

Me: Are you okay? Why are you quiet?

Rebaone: Uhm... I... It's nothing.

Me: Are you sure?

Rebaone: Yes.

...

What does Rebaone think? Does she think that I am just going to marry her and not sleep with her? She must be a big fool. I will sleep with her anytime I want... more than the way I sleep with Bianca. Oh Bianca? She was really good today. She gave it to me like someone who is really sorry and who is still interested in me and the relationship. (Laughs) Kaden Jones is the best.

...

Rebaone: What was that all about? Why did you just laugh out loud like that?

Me: Oh, I am so sorry. The thing is I can't help myself around you.

Rebaone: What do you mean?

Me: You are already in my head.

Rebaone: Really? So soon?

Me: Well, yes. I have never met a girl like you. You are so nice to me.

Rebaone: Oh... Wow.

Me: Do you have a boyfriend?

Rebaone: Uhm... Me?

Me: Yes beautiful, you.

Rebaone: [I have to lie or else Bongani and Resego will pay for my mistake.]

Rebaone: No, I... I don't have a boyfriend.

Me: (Smiles) That's good. We don't know why our parents want us to get married but let's try to be happy. Maybe we are meant to be together. Let's see where our relationship will take us. Can you do that?

Rebaone: (Smiles) Sure.

Me: Good. Shall we go downstairs?

Rebaone: Yeah.

...

I got up and hugged her. We then headed downstairs and we told everyone that we will get married.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[NALEDI]

I am always happy to see my friend, Rebaone. She's a real friend and her heart is full of love. She came to see me and I am truly happy but she looks troubled.

...

Me: Babe, what's wrong?

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Rebaone: Naledi, my parents succeeded in defeating me.

Me: Talk to me. What happened?

...

She told me everything - how she was blackmailed and how Bongani was arrested yesterday.

...

Me: I am so sorry for everything you went through. Why were you not at campus today?

Rebaone: Kaden and his parents were at home. I am sorry, I should've told you that I was not going to show up at school today.

Me: It's okay, babe. So how is Kaden?

Rebaone: He looks like a good person but I don't trust him. I don't even know if I am making sense.

Me: You are but tell me why you don't trust him.

...

She began to tell me about the girl called Bianca and what Bianca told her.

...

Me: Did she really change her story?

Rebaone: Yes, she did. Somebody threatened her and I think that it was my father.

Me: Who is this Bianca?

Rebaone: I have seen her at school before. I don't know what course she is doing.

Me: Our school? Our campus?

Rebaone: Yeah.

Me: Wow, I need to see her as soon as possible. Obviously she was threatened. How can she just change her story?

Rebaone: Exactly my point. I have another concern.

Me: I am listening.

Rebaone: You know that I am a virgin.

Me: (Giggles) Yes, I do.

Rebaone: I want to break my virginity before I get married. I don't want Kaden to break my virginity. He had the audacity to tell me that he will make love to me everyday. I am not ready for that.

Me: (Laughs) Ask Bongani to help you.

Rebaone: Bongani is not taking my calls and I am not surprised.

Me: Let's go to his place. It's not far from here.

Rebaone: Yeah I know that it's not far from here but...

...

I grabbed her by the hand and led her out of the house.

...

Me: Let's go. We can even walk.

Rebaone: Fine.

...

We walked to Bongani's place. We know that he lives with other students in the house but what shocked us was when a girl came out of his room wearing his shirt - the shirt that was actually bought by Reba a week ago. How disrespectful is this?

...

Me: Bongani, what's going on?

Rebaone: Naledi, this is the girl I told you about. She always wanted Bongani and now it looks like she got him. Bongani, I hope that you are happy with her.

Bongani: Babe, I... I am so sorry but I am tired of your family's drama and bullshit. I was arrested because of our stupid love.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Wow, did you just say stupid love?

Bongani: Yes. I am still young. I don't want to ruin my life because of you. I am sorry but we can't be together anymore.

...

Rebaone stormed out of the house. I went after her. She got hit by a car as soon as she got outside the yard. Everything was happening so fast. It all felt surreal but guess what? It was really happening. My friend was lying there and she was losing blood. The gentleman who injured her got out of the car and immediately called the ambulance. He introduced himself as Jaden and I couldn't stop drooling. HOT!!!

...

Jaden: Please call her parents. They need to know about this.

Me: Are you crazy?

Jaden: What do you mean?

Me: Her parents will kill you. You really look like a good person. This is an accident and you obviously did not plan it. I don't want you to suffer.

Jaden: Are you not her friend?

Me: I am but I know my friend. She would also do the same thing. I am not calling her parents, Jaden. They are heartless and they will destroy you.

Jaden: Wow, thank you.

...

The ambulance arrived and my friend was taken to the hospital just in time. Jaden and I followed the ambulance. Yes, I got in Jaden's car and he's a stranger.

What can I do? He's a yummy stranger and he's kind hearted.

To be continued...

5

[AT THE HOSPITAL]

[JADEN]

Oh my God, I didn't see where that girl came from. The road was clear and all of a sudden she was right in front of my car - MY NEW SPORTS CAR!!! Is this some kind of bad luck? What if she dies? That girl wants to destroy my life. I am so scared but I won't tell my greedy parents. Let me just call my friend, Damien.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Damien: Buddy, where are you? I want to see your new sports car. I have been waiting for you for so long.

Me: Wow. Hey to you too.

Damien: (Giggles) I am sorry. I am just excited. How are you?

Me: Nothing is good, bro.

Damien: What's going on? Were you not able to pay the remaining amount for the car?

Me: No, the car is with me but I hit someone with it and...

Damien: What did you say?

Me: Damien, you heard me. Please come to the hospital.

Damien: Which hospital?

Me: The biggest hospital in our area.

Damien: Is he dead?

Me: She.

Damien: Huh?

Me: It's a girl and No, she's not dead.

Damien: Thank God. I'll be right there.

Me: Please don't tell my family anything.

Damien: No problem.

Me: Thank you. Bye.

Damien: Bye.

...

I hung up and looked at Naledi. Why is she staring at me like this? Did I say something wrong?

...

Me: What's wrong?

Naledi: Who were you talking to?

Me: My friend, Damien. Why are you asking?

Naledi: Well, I heard everything that you said to him. Why is it that you don't want your family members to know about the accident?

Me: Well, it's a long story.

Naledi: Who is going to take care of the hospital bills?

Me: It's me. Don't I look like someone who can pay up hospital bills?

Naledi: How old are you?

Me: I am Twenty Four Years of age, why are you asking?

Naledi: Are you not depending on your parents?

Me: No, I am a business man and I don't depend on my parents for things. I am doing good in life.

Naledi: I am sorry about your car. It's brand new and my friend...

Me: No, it's okay. Let it go. What matters right now is your friend. I just want her to be fine.

Naledi: Don't worry about anything. God will keep her alive.

Me: Amen. How old is she and what is she doing?

Naledi: She's the same age as me. She's Twenty Years of age and we are second year students at University.

Me: Interesting. What's troubling her? I mean she didn't see the car.

Naledi: You also didn't see her. Is something troubling you?

Me: (Giggles) Nice one. Uhm... Well, nothing is troubling me. I didn't see your friend at all.

Naledi: You were driving like a maniac.

Me: Well, I was testing my new car's speed.

Naledi: It's understandable. Well, my friend found her boyfriend cheating on her. Uhm... Her ex boyfriend.

Me: Really? What happened?

...

She told me everything and I wasn't shocked at all. Life is full of heartbreakers. I have also been hurt before and I believe that I have also hurt someone before but I hope that... Hold on, I don't even know Naledi's friend. What's her name?

...

Naledi: Why are you quiet?

Me: I am sorry that your friend was cheated on. What's her name?

Naledi: Rebaone.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Mhmm, okay.

...

My friend finally arrived. I introduced him to Naledi. The nurse came to us with some documents.

...

Naledi: Nurse, is everything okay?

Nurse: Uhm... We need the patient's family to sign this documents in order for the doctors to continue with whatever they were doing.

Damien: Nurse, is the patient badly injured?

Nurse: Yes. She's also internally bleeding and the truth is we might lose her that's why we need this documents to be signed. We want a family member to allow us to go ahead with the operation.

Naledi: How can you worry about such things at a time like this? My friend will not die, do what you have to do to save her life.

Nurse: We need a family member to sign this documents.

Naledi: Fine. Her husband will sign the documents.

...

Damien and I looked at Naledi.

This is shocking. Is Rebaone really married? What was the rush?
Well, who am I to judge?

...

Nurse: Okay, where's the husband?

Naledi: He's right here. It's him.

...

This Naledi girl just pointed at me. Is she crazy? I am not anyone's husband. Well, she's doing this for a good cause so I will just have to play along. We are running out of time. I don't want Rebaone to die.

...

Damien: Nurse, it's true. Jaden is the patient's husband. Let him sign the documents.

Nurse: Okay. Please come with me, Mr Jaden.

...

I followed the nurse.

...

[DAMIEN]

Naledi is very smart. What the doctors don't know won't kill them. Jaden Jones is my best friend and I don't want him to be miserable because of what happened. Naledi is an angel.

...

Me: Thank you so much, Naledi.

Naledi: Why are you thanking me?

Me: I felt defeated immediately when the nurse asked for...
What's your friend's name?

Naledi: Rebaone.

Me: Yeah, I felt defeated immediately when the nurse asked for her family members but your lie saved all of us.

Naledi: (Smiles) Yeah.

Me: Where is her family?

Naledi: I can't call her parents because they will never forgive Jaden. That's all I can say.

Me: It's okay. I understand.

...

My phone is ringing and the truth is I'm not in the mood to talk to the person who is calling me. It's Kaden, what does he want?

...

Naledi: Aren't you going to get that?

Me: Uhm... It's Jaden's brother. I will talk to him later.

Naledi: Wow, Jaden has a brother? That's nice.

Nice? What's nice about having Kaden as a brother? He's the worst person on earth. He's nothing like Jaden.

Naledi: Why are you quiet? Is Jaden's brother not a nice person?

Me: Uhm... Let it go.

Naledi: Come on. I'm curious. What's his name?

Me: Curiosity killed the cat. You don't need to know Jaden's brother. He's a waste of time.

Naledi: Okay, no problem. But please answer the phone. It's really making noise.

Me: Fine. I'll go outside.

Naledi: Okay, I'll be right here. Make it snappy.

Me: Sure, Ma'am.

I smiled and walked out. Kaden won't stop calling me until I answer. He's really a nuisance. What does he want?

To be continued...

6

[KADEN]

Damn, Jaden and Damien are really annoying. Why are they not answering their phones? How long should I call them? Stupid friends. Let me call Damien again.

I called Damien and finally he answered.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Damien: Kaden.

Me: What kind of a fool are you?

Damien: Excuse me?

Me: You heard me. Do you think that you are important? Why didn't you answer your phone when I first called?

Damien: Who are you? My God?

Me: Just shut up and listen. Give the phone to your foolish friend.

Damien: Jaden is busy.

Me: Where is his phone?

Damien: I'm not the keeper of his phone.

Me: You are growing balls. Just shut up.

Damien: Did you call me to insult me?

Me: Tell Jaden that mom and dad are inviting him for dinner tonight. Come with him.

Damien: Ask nicely or else we won't come.

Me: Damien, please come to dinner tonight. Come with my brother.

Damien: (Laughs) That's better. We will be there.

Me: Bye, idiot.

Damien: Bye, fool.

Me: I will kill you one day, you are so...

...

He hung up on me before I could finish talking. Damien is a Demon. Where did Jaden get him?

...

Mavis: What happened?

Me: They will come.

Mavis: Must you always be mean to Damien?

Me: Damien is also always mean to me.

Mackenzie: Brother, you know that Damien is always mean to you because you always provoke him. Did you hear how you were speaking to him?

Me: Mackenzie, shut up.

Denis: Kaden, your sister and mother are right. You are always fighting with everyone including your own twin brother, Jaden.

Me: But dad...

Denis: You have anger and I don't know why. Jaden is my son just like you so you should stop fighting with him or his friend.

Me: Why don't you tell him to marry Reb...

Denis: Kaden, I am warning you. Keep quiet.

Mackenzie: Marriage? Who's getting married?

Mavis: No one, honey.

Mackenzie: But Kaden said something about marriage. What's going on?

Me: Shut up, carrot face. Nobody is getting married.

Mackenzie: (Laughs) Don't call me carrot face. I am beautiful more than Bianca.

Me: (Smiles) That's true but my future wife is beautiful more than you and Bianca. Her beauty is out this world.

Mackenzie: Your future wife? Who is she?

Me: The one I saw in my dreams.

Mackenzie: (Laughs) You are losing your mind. Mom, let's start preparing food. We are running out of time.

Denis: Mackenzie is right. We all know that Jaden is always right on time and he doesn't like to eat late.

Mavis: Yes, let's go Mackenzie.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: What time should they be here?

Mavis: 19:00.

Me: Okay. I'll quickly text Damien. They better show up.

Mavis: They will come. Don't worry.

Mackenzie: Let's go, mom. I can't wait to see Jaden.

...

Mackenzie and mom went to the kitchen.

...

Denis: Son, Jaden must not find out about your wedding.

Me: Why not?

Denis: He will make sure that he stops the wedding. You know how he is.

Me: Yeah, you are right.

Denis: He should also not be invited to the wedding.

Me: Okay.

Denis: Do you see yourself falling in love with Rebaone?

Me: (Laughs) Love? I am already in love with that girl. She's what I need in life.

Denis: So why are you still with Bianca?

Me: I don't know. Bianca is obsessed with me.

Denis: Do you love her?

Me: (Laughs) Dad, I need something from my room.

Denis: But I am still...

...

I didn't give him a chance to finish talking. I headed to my room.

...

[19:30]

[REBAONE]

A hospital bed? What am I doing here? Oh God, my entire body is in so much pain. What happened to me and who's this young man sleeping on the chair? And why is he holding my hand so tight?

I woke him up and he told me that his name is Jaden.

...

Me: What happened to me?

Jaden: I.. I hit you with my car. I am so sorry.

Me: Uhm... Where is my friend? Her name is Naledi and I was with her at my boyfriend's place.

Jaden: Oh yes, Naledi and my friend Damien went to get food. They drove to this other restaurant.

Me: Uhm... I see. Did you tell my parents about this?

Jaden: No, your friend told me that she can't tell them.

Me: Good. They were going to destroy you.

Jaden: I think that our parents are the same. Truth is my parents are horrible. I am sorry to say this about them but... uhm... It's the truth.

Me: I understand. I really do. I know exactly what you are talking about.

Jaden: You really seem like a nice person.

Me: (Smiles) You also seem like a nice person. You didn't hit me with a car and disappear. Thank you.

Jaden: No, let me thank you.

Me: For what?

Jaden: (Smiles) For not dying. I am so relieved.

Me: (Giggles) Okay, Mr Killer.

Jaden: (Laughs) Mr Killer? That's not my name.

Me: You almost killed me so that's your name from now on.

...

We laughed. Jaden aka Mr Killer is really a nice person. May God bless him for not letting me die.

To be continued...

7

[MACKENZIE]

I still can't believe that Jaden never came home. We invited him to dinner and he didn't show up. Mom and dad are so angry and I don't blame them but I believe that Jaden had something very important to do. He's not a bad person at all. It's now 21:00 and he's still not answering his phone. Damien is also not answering his phone.

...

Kaden: Are you still thinking about Jaden and Damien?

Me: Yes. Where's mom and dad?

Kaden: They are sleeping. You should also go to bed. Jaden and Damien are not children. They are fine wherever they are.

Me: I still don't understand why they didn't come.

Kaden: They are ungrateful.

Me: No, maybe something is wrong.

Kaden: I am going to bed. You are too much.

...

Kaden went to bed.

...

[THAPELO]

Rebaone is beginning to irritate me. Where is she at this time of the night? I hope that she's not with Bongani right now. She's getting married in two months. I am so angry.

...

Bridget: Dear, please calm down.

Me: How do you tell me to calm down? Your daughter is doing this on purpose.

...

Resego walked in.

...

Resego: I was on the phone with Naledi. Rebaone is with her.

Me: What is she doing with Naledi at this time of the night?

Resego: Thapelo, you are always suspecting my sister. Calm yourself down.

Bridget: Is she coming home?

Resego: No. They took a trip to Durban and they'll be in Durban for three weeks.

Me: And what about school?

Resego: The students of her University are striking.

Me: Since when?

Resego: They are starting tomorrow.

Me: You seem to know a lot about the things happening at your sister's school. You are still in High School and you should mind your business.

Bridget: Darling, calm down.

Resego: Thapelo, you are truly ungrateful. I came to tell you what's happening because I wanted you to stop thinking that my sister is with Bongani and you are here telling me to mind my own business? Wow, you are...

Bridget: Honey, it's okay. Your father is...

Resego: Don't "honey" me. The two of you are the same. Leave me alone and don't even try to call my sister. Her phone will be switched off for three weeks.

...

She walked away. She never cease to amaze me. Where did she get so much anger from? What a stupid girl.

...

[RESEGO]

What is wrong with Bridget and Thapelo? I told them a lie about strike and they actually believed me. What kind of

parents are they? Well, I better check up on my sister. No one else should know that she's actually in my room. They will kill the person who injured her. Yes, my sister told me everything and I got to meet the boy who almost killed her. His name is Jaden and I wish that he was the one marrying my sister.

I went to my room and locked the door.

...

Me: Reba, they fell for my story. Once again, they have proved to me that they are not good parents.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Rebaone: What happened? What did you tell them?

Me: I told them that you are in Durban and that your University is striking from tomorrow... striking for three weeks.

Jaden: Did they really believe you?

Me: Yes, they did. So the two of you should get going.

Jaden: Are you sure that we should not tell your parents the truth?

Rebaone: Yes, I am sure. They are horrible. My boyfriend was arrested because of them. I don't want them to ruin your life.

Jaden: But my parents are also powerful. They will help me in any way possible.

Me: Jaden, the last thing we want is for our family to fight with yours. Please understand. We are doing this for you.

Jaden: Okay, no problem. We should get going.

Me: (Smiles) Reba, I packed everything you will need. Please go. By the way, your wheelchair looks good.

Rebaone: Shut up, you fool.

...

I laughed and kissed her cheek. I made sure that they go out of the house without being seen.

...

[A WEEK LATER]

[REBAONE]

I have been a bad girl. I literally ran away from the hospital with a stranger and decided to live with him. Well, Mr Killer is really a good person. I am in Johannesburg but my parents believe that I am in Durban. They are not caring that's why they believed Resego.

Jaden rented some house far away from home but definitely close to my campus. I haven't been going to campus because of

my situation but my best friend, Naledi is always at school and she's always updating me about the school work. She's a true friend. I am healing because I have Jaden with me. He's always there for me. People would think that we are husband and wife.

Jaden walked in my room with a big smile.

...

Me: Hey, how was work?

Jaden: It was okay. I am happy to see you.

Me: Me too. Did you go home? To your parents?

Jaden: Yes, I went to see my family members early before I went to work.

Me: And...?

Jaden: They were mad at me.

Me: I don't blame them. You never showed up when they invited you to dinner and you didn't talk to them for the whole week or see them.

Jaden: Yeah, I know. Well, I was focusing on you. I had to and I will continue to do that.

Me: Jay, you are truly a good person but you can't ignore your family because of me.

Jaden: Aren't you also ignoring your family because of me?

Me: Uhm... I... But you know why I did what I did.

Jaden: Let everything go. Focus only on yourself.

Me: Do you mind telling me about your family?

Jaden: Uhm... I am not ready to talk about my family.

Me: Why not?

Jaden: You already know the answer to that.

Me: Okay, let's agree on one thing.

Jaden: What is it?

Me: We won't talk about our family members. You don't like talking about your family members and I don't like talking about my family members so let's agree never to talk about them.

Jaden: (Smiles) Excellent but I don't mind telling you about my sister since I already met your nice sister.

Me: (Smiles) Great. Tell me everything about your sister, starting with her name, her age and her school.

To be continued...

8

[ANOTHER WEEK LATER]

[BRIDGET]

My son, Thuso told me something very disturbing and I don't know whether to believe him or not.

Resego came back from school.

...

Me: Resego, what's going on?

Resego: Hey to you too, housewife.

Me: Why must you always disrespect me?

Resego: How am I disrespecting you? Are you not a housewife?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Resego: I thought as much. Tell me what you wanted to say when I got here.

Me: Thuso told me that he saw you packing Reba's things and took them to your room.

Resego: When?

Me: Two weeks ago.

Resego: [Oh my God, Thuso and his big mouth. What do I say now?]

Me: Resego?

Resego: Bridget?

Me: What were you doing with your sister's things?

Resego: I don't live in the past. Please leave me alone. I am tired.

Me: Is Rebaone in your room?

Resego: No, she's not.

Me: I want to check.

Resego: Go ahead and check.

Me: Your room is locked and Rebaone's room is also locked all thanks to you.

Resego: Fine, I'll unlock my room for you. Let's go.

Resego: [Bridget is foolish. I gave the clothes to Rebaone when she was here with Jaden and that was two weeks ago. I was not caught, why should I get caught now?]

...

Why is she smiling? I hope that she's not hiding anything from me.

...

Me: Why are you smiling?

Resego: We are in my room. Do you see Reba's things here?

Me: Uhm... No.

Resego: Thuso is a fool.

Me: But Thuso is not a liar.

Resego: Oh, wait wait wait wait wait, are you calling me a liar?

Me: Sego, it's fine. I believe you.

Resego: Well, to clear the misunderstanding. I took Reba's clothes and washed them for her.

Me: At night?

Resego: Yes, at night. Is that wrong?

Me: Uhm... What about her toiletries, her shoes, her make up bag and some of her books?

Resego: Oh, it looks like Thuso told you everything. I am not a bad person. Do you have a problem if I use my sister's things?

Me: Uhm... No but she doesn't like sharing her things.

Resego: You think that you know my sister but the truth is you don't. I share everything with my sister. Please leave my room and stop painting me as a bad person.

Me: Okay, I am sorry honey. It won't happen again.

Resego: I'll see you later..

...

She chased me out of her room. Locked it and walked out of the house.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[REBAONE]

I am so happy that Resego and Mackenzie are here. They really get along. We don't need the other family members, and by "we" I am talking about Jaden and I.

It has been fun having Naledi, Damien, Resego and Mackenzie around but I sent them to three different restaurants because I really want to talk to Jaden.

...

Jaden: Why are you quiet? What are you thinking about?

Me: Do you have a girlfriend?

Jaden: No, why?

Me: I am getting married in five weeks and I'm not in love with him.

Jaden: Why did you agree to marry him?

Me: I am forced.

Jaden: Really?

Me: Yes. Resego will pay for my mistakes if I don't do as I'm told.

Jaden: Who's doing this to you?

Me: My parents.

Jaden: Wow, they are very bad.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: I have a little brother. His life is not like ours because he's a boy.

Jaden: "Ours"?

Me: I'm talking about myself and Resego.

Jaden: Oh, I see. How old is your little brother?

Me: Fifteen. I know that he will be forced to do so many things he's not happy about once he turns Eighteen.

Jaden: I am so sorry, Reba.

Me: Please do me a favor.

Jaden: Sure. Anything for you.

Me: Anything for me?

Jaden: Yes, anything for you.

Me: Do you promise?

...

He smiled and nodded.

Does he know what I'm about to ask him to do for me? He better not go back on his word.

...

Jaden: I promise. Tell me.

Me: Please break my virginity.

...

He got up, looked into my eyes and laughed like never before.

...

Me: What's funny, Jay?

Jaden: You are very funny, Reba.

Me: Are you not going to help me?

Jaden: Come on, you are not a virgin but trust me, that's a good joke.

...

He continued to laugh at me but I kept quiet and just stared at him.

...

Jaden: [Why is she so serious? Is she really a virgin?]

...

He stopped laughing and sat down next to me. He looked into my eyes and spoke very softly.

...

Jaden: Are you really a virgin?

Me: Yes, I am.

Jaden: In this new era? This year? How old are you?

Me: Yes, yes, Twenty.

Jaden: Huh?

Me: I was answering your questions.

Jaden: Reba, are you a virgin?

Me: Yes, I am. Should I show you?

Jaden: Uhm... No, no, are you mad?

Me: (Giggles) So what do you say?

Jaden: About what?

Me: Breaking my virginity.

Jaden: You are a crazy girl. I am not sleeping with you.

Me: Why not? Am I not attractive?

Jaden: You are very attractive but sex is just not sex to me. It has a meaning. I can't just sleep with you.

Me: Come on, you don't have feelings for me.

Jaden: [Girl, I developed feelings for you the first day I hit you with a car. I can't tell you this because you are already getting married and I know that you don't love me. You love Bongani with all your heart that's why you are forever talking about him and how much he hurt you.]

...

Why is Mr Killer quiet? What is he thinking about and why is he failing to look at me? Doesn't he find me attractive at all? Well, this is just sex. He doesn't have to love me. I just don't want Kaden to be the one to break my virginity. I am not in love with Kaden. I am in love with Bongani but the truth is Bongani does not want me anymore. I can't run after him but I am hoping

that he will come back to me one day. I really love Bongani but Kaden is the one who is going to marry me in five weeks. He can't be the one to break my virginity, I can't allow him. I want Jaden to break my virginity because he's a nice person and it's not even like he has a girlfriend.

...

Me: Jay, it's too quiet. Please say something.

Jaden: What do you want me to say?

Me: Say yes.

Jaden: You are not doing well. You had an operation, remember?

Me: I am aware of everything but you can break my virginity a week before my wedding. I will be fine by then. We have five weeks until the wedding. Please say yes.

Jaden: Why me?

Me: You are single and you are good hearted. You are also my friend.

Jaden: Is that all?

Me: Yes. I won't catch feelings. I promise.

Jaden: [I wish that you could love me the way I love you. Why did I allow this to get this far? Yes, I am in love with this girl and I feel like a fool. I wish that I was the one marrying her.]

Me: Jaden, please say something. You promised to do anything for me.

...

He walked out of the room.

Did I say something wrong? Or does he not believe that I won't catch feelings at all? Damn, I wish that I was able to read minds.

To be continued...

9

[A WEEK BEFORE KADEN AND REBAONE'S WEDDING]

[THAPELO]

I am so happy that everything is going well. Kaden and Rebaone are getting married next week. Denis and I are getting closer to our money. I am truly over the moon and no one can understand better than Denis that's why I came to see him.

...

Me: My friend, we did a good job.

Denis: (Smiles) Nobody can understand this better than you. We are going to make more money out of our children's marriage.

Me: You are right. Money is really good.

Denis: It is. People are always saying that money can't buy you happiness. How's that true, my friend?

Me: (Laughs) It's not true at all. Money makes life more simple.

Denis: And fun.

Me: Let's toast to money.

Denis: (Smiles) Let's toast to money and more money.

Me: Great.

...

We clinked our glasses and enjoyed our whiskey. God is truly great but MONEY is greater.

...

[KADEN]

I came to visit Jaden and he looks miserable. I wonder who broke his heart. Is he finally in a relationship? Well, I don't care. I am only here to find out whether he knows about my wedding or not.

...

Me: Jaden, what's wrong with you?

Kaden: Nothing. Why are you here?

Me: I came to check if you know anything about the wedding.

Jaden: The wedding? Whose wedding?

...

I should be very smart about this. It looks like he doesn't know that I am getting married next week so I should lie.

...

Jaden: Speak up.

Me: Uhm... Well, Luis said that he wants to get married.

Jaden: (Laughs) Luis? Your best friend? What does he know about marriage?

Me: Why are you always so mean to my friend?

Jaden: And why are you always mean to my friend, Damien?

Me: Jaden Jones, you are nothing like me. Stop it.

Jaden: What do you mean?

Me: There's only one monster at home and that's me. You are supposed to be a nice person. You are the Jesus Christ of the family and I'm the Satan of the family.

Jaden: (Laughs) What did you just say?

Me: You heard me.

Jaden: So you are admitting that you are a very bad person?

Me: Yes and I am happy. I won't change for anyone.

Jaden: Okay, Mr Satan. Let me tell you something.

Me: I am listening.

Jaden: You are not the only monster at home. Your father and mother are also just like you.

Me: Okay, no problem.

Jaden: Please leave my house. I don't want the devil in you to linger around in my house.

Me: Well, I just came here to find out if you know anything about Luis' wedding.

Jaden: I don't care about your evil friend. Get lost.

Me: (Smiles) Bye, twin brother.

Jaden: Thank God, we are not identical. You are really a monster.

...

I smiled and left. He doesn't know anything about my wedding. It's good. He should continue to be in the dark. Mackenzie is also in the dark and it's a good thing. I mean, she's always siding with Jaden and not with me, Kaden.

...

[JADEN]

God, what kind of a person is Kaden Jones? Why does he enjoy being wicked? He's really lost and I feel sorry for him.

Damien walked in.

...

Me: Oh, hey buddy.

Damien: That horrible brother of yours just insulted me outside the yard.

Me: I am not surprised. I am really sorry.

Damien: No, it's okay. Are you okay?

Me: Yeah, I am fine.

Damien: You haven't been yourself ever since you left the house you rented for you and Reba. What's wrong?

Me: She's getting married next week.

Damien: I am aware of that. Are you going to her wedding?

Me: Yes, we are all going:

Damien: "We"?

Me: You, me, Mackenzie and Naledi. We need to support her. Oh, I almost forgot. Nia will also be there.

Damien: Nia? Mackenzie's friend?

Me: Yeah.

Damien: Okay, we can all go to the wedding but I want to say something to you right now.

Me: I am all ears.

Damien: Stop the wedding.

Me: Huh?

Damien: You heard me.

Me: Why should I do that?

Damien: You love her.

Me: Love her? Who?

Damien: You know that I'm talking about Reba. You are in love with her.

Me: (Laughs) You are foolish. I am not in love with anyone.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Damien: You can lie to me but you can't lie to yourself.

...

Damien got a disturbing message from someone. His eyes said it all.

...

Me: What's going on?

Damien: Did you promise to do something for Reba and went back on your word?

Me: No, why?

Damien: Listen to this message.

Me: Okay.

Damien: "Hey Damien, it's Naledi. I got your number from Mackenzie. You have to get to the white warehouse behind my campus right away. Reba is threatening to commit suicide if Jaden does not give her what she wants. I don't know the whole story but what I know is that Jaden promised to do something for Reba and later went back on his word. Please do something and get Jaden here right now!!!"

...

I got up and looked at Damien.

...

Me: Woah. That's crazy. Let's get out of here right now. We need to save Reba's life.

Damien: I don't know the white warehouse they are talking about.

Me: I know it. It's old and isolated. Let's go.

Damien: Sure.

...

We left.

Reba wants to commit suicide because I refused to break her virginity. I never knew that she was this serious. And what about my feelings? I already caught feelings and sex will make

things worse. God, why did you bring a crazy girl into my life?
Who have I offended to deserve this?

...

Damien: Jay, there is the campus. They said behind the campus.

Me: The white warehouse is five streets away from the campus:

Damien: Is she not dead by now? You have been driving for so long:

Me: Keep your mouth shut. How can you talk about death? I won't let her die.

Damien: [This is the time to get the truth out of Jaden. He loves Reba and I want him to say it out loud.]

Damien: Why won't you let her die? It's not even like you love her.

Me: Stop it.

Damien: (Yells) WHY? LET HER DIE. SHE'S A CRAZY GIRL!!!

Me: (Shouts) I LOVE THAT CRAZY GIRL. I AM IN LOVE WITH HER. BE NICE WHEN TALKING ABOUT HER!!!

Damien: [I knew it. It's now out and I will make sure that Reba's wedding is stopped.]

...

Why is Damien quiet?

...

Damien: Jay, I am so sorry. I didn't mean to act the way I acted but I just wanted you to be honest about your feelings.

Me: Wow, so you were testing me?

Damien: Yeah, I was.

...

We arrived at the warehouse and I was shocked to see the condition Reba was in - A Mess!!!

...

Me: Reba, are you crazy? Why would you want to kill yourself?

Rebaone: Stay back, Jaden or else I'll pull the trigger.

...

Where did she get a gun? I don't really know this girl and I don't know what she's capable of. She might really pull the trigger. I must agree to do whatever she wants. I am not ready to lose her to death.

...

Me: Rebaone, give me the gun.

Rebaone: No, you lied to me. You told me that you would do anything for me and later went back on your word. I am going to kill myself right in front of you.

Me: Please listen to me. I will do whatever you want and I am really sorry for going back on my word. It won't happen again.

Rebaone: Really?

Me: Yes, I promise.

Rebaone: We should do it today.

Me: Whatever you want. Please give me the gun.

...

She gave me the gun and I hugged her.

God, I have never been this scared before in my life. I was scared when I hit her with my car but today... Oh my God. Is this a dream?

We left the warehouse. I was driving Reba's car and Damien came with Naledi behind us. He was driving my car.

...

Rebaone: Jaden, what is your surname?

Me: Do you really want to talk about my surname after everything that you put me through?

Rebaone: What do you want me to talk about?

Me: You should be apologizing to me.

Rebaone: For what?

Me: For everything you put me through. Do you know how scared I was when I saw you with that gun?

Rebaone: (Smiles) You care about me, don't you?

Me: Of course I do.

Rebaone: Well, I also care about you.

Me: You are my friend but I have never met a selfish girl like you.

Rebaone: How am I selfish? I did what I did because you broke a promise you made to me.

...

We arrived at my place.

...

Me: I don't want to talk to you. You are selfish and you should do something about that.

Rebaone: Are you refusing to tell me your surname because I am selfish? It's fine, I will ask Mackenzie. I did what I did because I don't want Kaden to break my virginity. Was I wrong?

Me: Kaden? Who is Kaden?

...

She got off the car and walked away from me.

Who the hell is Kaden? Is my twin brother not Kaden? Is my brother marrying the girl I love? Uhm... No, no, no, it's impossible. Kaden is Bianca's boyfriend and he's not for marriage nor is marriage for him.

To be continued...

10

[REBAONE]

God, I really hate arguing with Jaden. It feels wrong but I don't understand why he's so angry. I should be the one who is angry because he broke a promise he made to me.

Kaden called me and I just looked at the phone. I didn't save his number but I know it very well.

What does he want? I am not in the mood to talk to him. He ruined my life and he took away my happiness by agreeing to marry me.

Naledi and Damien arrived with food.

...

Naledi: Where is Jaden?

Me: In the car. Didn't you see him when you came in?

Naledi: No. He's not there.

Me: Damien, is Naledi telling the truth?

Damien: Yeah. Jaden is not outside.

Me: Well, that's weird. I left him in the car.

Damien: Did you fight?

Me: Maybe.

Damien: Please call him and find out where he is.

Me: Okay, no problem.

Naledi: He should come back soon. We are hungry.

Me: Okay, I will call him.

...

I called Jaden and he told me that he went to see his parents because they couldn't stop calling him. Immediately after talking to him on the phone, I looked at Damien.

...

Damien: What's going on?

Me: He went to his parents' house.

Naledi: For what?

Me: I don't know. He took his car and he will be back shortly.

Naledi: Let's eat. He will eat later.

Me: Yeah, no problem.

Damien: I wonder why he just left without saying anything. They must have been bothering him. Yes, let's eat.

...

[JADEN]

I lied to Reba because I don't want her to know that I want to find out if my brother is the one marrying her or not.

...

Mavis: Jaden, what's bothering you?

Me: Where is Kaden?

Mavis: He's not around. Didn't he come to your place today?

Me: He did.

Denis: Jaden, I was with Kaden thirty minutes ago at the barber shop. He's still there.

Me: Is there something I don't know?

Denis: Something like what?

Me: Is Kaden getting married?

Denis: (Laughs) Kaden? Marriage? Are you crazy?

Me: What do you mean, dad?

Denis: Kaden and marriage? Have you forgotten how your brother is?

Me: No, I haven't.

Mavis: Son, Kaden is not getting married. We would've told you.

...

Where is Mackenzie? She can never lie to me. She lives in this house and she must know if Kaden is getting married or not.

...

Denis: Why are you quiet? Did somebody tell you that Kaden is getting married?

Mavis: And who is he marrying? Bianca?

Me: No, let it go. It's all in my head but I'm fine now.

Mavis: Okay, son. Would you like something to eat?

Me: No, mom. I need to get going.

Mavis: Okay. No problem, my dear.

Me: Is Mackenzie around?

Denis: No, she's not.

Me: Okay. Bye.

Denis: Bye, son. Take care of yourself.

Me: Thank you. I'll continue to pray for you. You will be good people one day. You won't be greedy and heartless.

Mavis: Jaden, did you have to insult us?

Me: I didn't insult you, mom.

Denis: Wonders shall never end. Thank you, Jesus Christ.
Continue to pray for us. We won't stop you.

Me: Repent before it's too late.

...

I got up and left.

...

[DENIS]

Must Jaden always preach to us? Is he perfect? Is he not a sinner like us? Everyone is a sinner so Jaden should give us a break.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Mavis: Why do you look so worried? You know that Jaden is different from us. Mackenzie is also different. She's exactly like Jaden.

Me: We need to send him away.

Mavis: Jaden?

Me: Yes. He must leave Johannesburg with Mackenzie before the wedding.

Mavis: Why?

Me: I don't want them at the wedding and you know that Jaden is smart. He will find out about the wedding if we don't send him away.

Mavis: I hear you, my dear. What are you going to do?

Me: Leave everything to me.

Mavis: (Smiles) I trust you.

Me: He won't be in Johannesburg by next week and Mackenzie will be with him.

Mavis: Okay, honey. What do you think about Reba?

Me: She's a good girl. I like her, I really do. I see our Mackenzie in her.

Mavis: (Smiles) Me too.

Me: Should I tell you a secret?

Mavis: Yeah.

Me: I actually like Reba for Jaden and not for Kaden. Don't tell Kaden.

Mavis: (Giggles) Don't worry. I won't tell him anything.

Me: Kaden deserves Bianca. Reba is too good for him. I wish that Jaden was the one marrying Reba.

Mavis: Why didn't you ask him to marry Reba before asking Kaden?

Me: (Laughs) You know how Jaden is. He was never going to agree to get married to someone he doesn't love. He was even going to make things difficult for us by trying his best to stop the wedding.

Mavis: You are right, he's different.

Me: That's true. Kaden is exactly like you and I that's why he would do absolutely anything for us even if I force him.

Mavis: Yeah, you are right.

...

[THE NEXT DAY]

[REBAONE]

I can't believe that I woke up next to Jaden but the truth is I am not bothered. He took away my virginity and I am really happy.

...

Me: Jaden, I am really happy. Thank you.

Jaden: It's not like I had a choice.

Me: Are you not happy that you broke my virginity?

Jaden: Well, you didn't give me problems. That's all I can say.

Me: (Smiles) Okay. I am happy that we are now fine. I still don't understand why we argued yesterday but I am happy that we are good now.

Jaden: Me too.

Me: How are your parents?

Jaden: I don't know. Why are you asking?

Me: You went to see them yesterday.

Jaden: Oh, yeah. They are fine. Look, I need to go to work. I'll drop you off at school.

Me: Yeah. Thank you. I allowed Naledi to take my car yesterday.

Jaden: Okay. Let's go.

...

We left. I arrived early at school and I was shocked when my father showed up. He looked very angry.

...

Me: Hi.

Thapelo: Come with me.

...

Why is he angry? Is it because I didn't sleep at home last night?

...

Me: Where are we going?

Thapelo: Home.

Me: I have a class in an hour. I just got here you know.

Thapelo: Let's go or else I will embarrass you in front of your mates.

Me: Fine.

...

I followed him to his car and left with him.

...

Me: Look, I am sorry for not coming back home last night but don't forget that it's your fault.

Thapelo: My fault? How is it my fault?

Me: You made me a woman before time. You are getting me married next week that means that I'm already a woman. I will have my own family and I don't need to report to you for anything. You are not my husband.

Thapelo: Is it me you are talking to like that?

Me: Is there another person in this car?

...

He stopped the car and looked at me. I felt like he was about to kill me.

...

Thapelo: What did you say?

Me: Daddy, you heard me.

Thapelo: Are you not going to take back your words?

Me: Uhm... I...

...

I got out of the car and ran for my life.

To be continued...

11

[MACKENZIE]

Oh my God. Is that Reba? Why is she on the run? Who is she running from?

I stopped the car next to the road.

...

Me: Hey, what's wrong? Get in.

Rebaone: God bless you.

...

She got in the car and I began to drive.

...

Me: What's going on?

Rebaone: I was running away from my father. It's really nothing serious.

Me: Are you sure?

Rebaone: Yeah.

Me: Okay. Where are you going?

Rebaone: School.

Me: I am also going to school. Unfortunately we don't go to the same campus but it's fine, I'll drop you off.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Thank you. Well, I've been meaning to ask you something.

Me: Yeah?

Rebaone: What's your surname?

Me: Koetle.

Rebaone: Koetle?

Me: Yeah. Doesn't it suit me?

Rebaone: No, no, it does. I am just shocked.

Me: Why are you shocked?

Rebaone: I thought that you are colored so the Sotho surname is...

Me: (Giggles) I know, babe.

...

I told her my boyfriend's surname because I have lost friends before. It's a long story but the truth is I've lost friends because of my parents. I really like Reba so I can't tell her that I am Mackenzie Jones, the daughter of Mavis and Denis Jones. I am ashamed to call Mavis and Denis my parents especially in public. My name is Mackenzie Koetle not Mackenzie Jones.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[REBAONE]

I arrived at home only to receive a hot slap from my mom. Well, I actually saw it coming. I made everyone angry by not sleeping at home last night but I am shocked that my mom slapped me in front of Kaden. By the way, what is Kaden doing here?

...

Me: Mom, I am sorry.

Bridget: You are selfish.

Me: I know.

Bridget: Your father is so angry with you. You are lucky that he's not here.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Bridget: Why didn't you answer Kaden's calls?

Me: I was busy.

Bridget: Too busy to talk to your future husband?

Me: Sorry.

Bridget: Get away from me. Go and get ready.

Me: Where am I going?

Bridget: You are going somewhere with Kaden. Go and change. Wear something sexy.

Me: Sexy? Why?

Bridget: Just do as I say.

...

I did as I was told and left with Kaden.

...

Me: Kaden, where are we going?

Kaden: It's a surprise.

Me: Are you also mad at me?

Kaden: No, I am fine. I know that life can be very hectic.

Me: Thanks for understanding. You are so nice.

...

We arrived at this other mansion. We went inside and sat down.

...

Me: Tell me what's going on.

Kaden: This is the house I want us to buy after getting married.

Me: (Laughs) Are you joking?

Kaden: No, I am not.

Me: Well, it's beautiful but I don't want it.

Kaden: Why not?

Me: It's too big for two people.

Kaden: Look at us. We don't deserve to settle for less.

Me: Jaden, I...

Kaden: KADEN is my name not JADEN.

Me: Kaden and Jaden are same names. Let it go.

Kaden: Well

Advertisement

I am not Jaden. I can never be Jaden.

Me: You are right, you can never be Jaden. I am sorry.

Kaden: It's okay.

Me: Do you know someone by the name Jaden?

Kaden: No, why?

Me: You are being very defensive. It's like you know someone by the name Jaden and you don't like him.

Kaden: No, it's nothing like that. I don't know anyone by the name Jaden. Do you know someone by the name Jaden?

...

Yes, I do. Jaden is the guy who broke my virginity and I will sleep with him everyday until the day before our wedding. He's a nice person and he's in my mind that's why I called you by his name.

...

Kaden: Reba?

Me: Huh?

Kaden: Answer me.

Me: No, I don't know anyone by the name Jaden.

Kaden: Okay. So will we buy this house?

Me: I'll think about it. Let's leave.

Kaden: Am I boring you?

Me: No.

Kaden: So what's the rush?

Me: Uhm... Okay, let's chill.

...

He came closer to me and attempted to kiss me but I pushed him away.

...

Kaden: What's wrong?

Me: Uhm... I... Sorry. I am just not ready to do what you want to do.

Kaden: I just wanted to kiss you.

Me: I am sorry.

...

I walked out of the house.

...

[THE WEDDING DAY]

It's my wedding day and I am not happy at all. I really don't want to be somebody's wife. I am still young. I am also not happy because Jaden, Mackenzie, Damien and Nia are not here. They had to go to Cape Town because of what happened to Damien's parents' house. I was told that the house was on fire the day before yesterday so Damien had to go there and Jaden left with him because he's a good friend. Mackenzie and her friend, Nia went to Cape Town because of business. Apparently

her father begged her to go to Cape Town for business and she took her friend along.

My father walked in.

...

Thapelo: Hey, how are you?

Me: Dad, please don't do this to me. I don't want to be Kaden's wife. I don't love him.

Thapelo: You will learn to love him. Calm down.

Me: Dad, please don't do this.

Thapelo: You look so beautiful. You look like a bride. Just smile. Don't embarrass me in front of the people I invited.

Me: You didn't even invite the people I know. You only invited your people.

Thapelo: Don't you know Naledi, Resego, Thuso, your mother, Kaden,...

Me: You know what I am talking about. My mates are not here. You know exactly what I am...

Thapelo: Let's go and stop talking too much. This is not a big event that's why I didn't invite the entire world. I am walking you down the aisle. Come.

...

I walked down the aisle with my father and I was in tears. People thought that I was in tears because I was happy but the truth is I was shattered. My parents are really evil. Why me?

The pastor did what he had to do. Kaden Jones is now my husband and my parents won again. I have been defeated again.

[THE DAY AFTER THE WEDDING]

[RESEGO]

I can't believe that my sister got married yesterday and went to Kaden's parents' house. I feel all alone. Thuso is a baby, there's nothing I can talk to him about.

Bridget walked in my room.

Me: You must learn to knock.

Bridget: Are those tears in your eyes?

Me: Bridget, what do you want?

Bridget: I just wanted to check if you are okay.

Me: No, you are here to laugh at me. You finally won, right?

Bridget: Won? Were we playing a game?

Me: Everything is a game to you. Don't forget that God is watching. You will get your own punishment.

Bridget: Why are you cursing me?

Me: A curse is provoked and the truth is I am not cursing you. You reap what you...

Bridget: Stop it. You don't have anyone else in this house. You should allow me to be your friend.

Me: You will never replace my sister. I will move out.

Bridget: No child of mine is moving out of the family house before marriage. Get that in your thick skull. Reba is married and that's why she is living with her in-laws. I will buy a mansion for Reba and her husband. We are still waiting for Reba to make up her mind.

Me: (Laughs) Did you say that you will buy a mansion for Reba and her husband?

Bridget: Yes.

Me: Do you have money? Are you working? Bridget, let me tell you something. You are living a good life because of your husband. You are not working. You are so stupid. You allowed Thapelo to control you. Was he not the one who told you to leave your job those years back? Don't come here and talk nonsense. You are too stupid to talk to me.

She slapped me. How dare she? I HATE HER!!!

To be continued...

12

[REBAONE]

I still can't believe that I am married. It's so surreal. I am married but I am not happy. This should be the happiest day of my life - waking up next to my husband. I am really not happy but I will try my best to be happy and make my in-laws happy... Uhm... and my husband. The truth is I am still in love with Bongani.

My phone started ringing and I was left shocked - BONGANI!!!

I declined the call and headed to the kitchen. I found my mother in-law preparing breakfast.

...

Me: (Smiles) Morning.

Mavis: (Smiles) Hey honey, how are you?

...

She hugged me.

...

Me: I am fine thanks and how are you?

Mavis: I am okay. Where's your husband?

Me: He's still sleeping and where's your husband?

Mavis: He had to rush to work.

Me: Okay.

Mavis: What time are you going to school?

Me: I am off for two weeks. I thought that you knew.

Mavis: Oh my God, I forgot that schools closed. My daughter is also off for two weeks.

Me: Daughter? Do you have a daughter?

Mavis: (Smiles) Yes, I do. I have two sons and one daughter.

Me: Are you serious?

Mavis: Very serious.

Me: So where are your other children? They didn't come to the wedding.

Mavis: Well, they couldn't make it but you will meet them very soon.

Me: (Smiles) Okay, no problem. I really can't wait to meet them.

Mavis: (Smiles) You will love them. Trust me.

Me: I trust you. Should I help you?

Mavis: Yes, please. I am done but you can just take some food to Jaden's room.

Me: Jaden?

Mavis: (Laughs) Oh my God, did I say Jaden? Sorry, I meant to say Kaden.

Me: Okay.

Mavis: Please be fast, he always eats breakfast in bed. He will wake up in few minutes and make noise.

...

Huh? Breakfast in bed? Everyday? I must say that Kaden is a spoiled brat. Am I going to give him breakfast in bed everyday? This is hell.

...

Mavis: Reba? Did you hear what I said?

Me: Uhm... Yes, mother. I did. Let me get going.

...

I took the tray of food and went back to the bedroom. Kaden was in the bathroom so I waited for him to finish up.

...

[KADEN]

I am now a married man but my wife refused to consummate the marriage with me last night. She didn't even want me to get

close to her. She's a drama queen but she must know that I am only giving her a week to get used to me. I am her husband and she should give me the cookie anytime I want it.

I finished in the bathroom and walked out.

...

Me: Morning, wife.

Rebaone: Morning, Kaden. Your breakfast is ready.

Me: Thank you but why didn't my mom bring it?

Rebaone: You are now a married man. You can't depend on your mom for everything.

Me: Oh, are you also going to make the bed and clean the room?

Rebaone: I guess so.

Me: Okay.

...

I went closer to her but she took two steps backwards.

...

Me: What's wrong with you? Can't I come close to you?

Rebaone: It's cold. Get in bed and eat.

Me: (Smiles) You can keep me warm, you know.

Rebaone: Uhm... I... I think that your mother is calling me. I'll see you later. Bye.

...

She rushed out of the room. Her phone began to ring. I checked it out.

Bongani? Who is Bongani? Well, I am very nosey so I am going to answer the phone. It's in my room.

I answered the phone.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Me: Why are you calling my wife?

Bongani: Hello to you too.

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Go to hell with your greetings and answer my question.

Bongani: Where is Reba?

Me: My wife?

Bongani: Your wife? (Laughs) Are you crazy?

Me: Do you want to see crazy? I will show you crazy.

Bongani: Are you threatening me?

Me: Maybe.

Bongani: Well, I am not scared of you.

Me: I will find you and I will make you pay. Trust me.

Bongani: (Laughs) What is wrong with you? Why did you even have to answer my girlfriend's phone?

Me: Girlfriend?

Bongani: Yes, Rebaone is my girlfriend and you should stay away from her.

Me: Your girlfriend?

Bongani: Yes, my girlfriend

Me: (Laughs) Okay. No problem.

...

I hung up.

I must say that my day is ruined. Am I really sharing this girl with another guy? She's a liar and I won't let her get away with this.

...

[BONGANI]

I admit that I was wrong for cheating on Reba but I never knew that she would give another guy her phone and allow him to insult me. She knows that I love her so why is she hurting me? To get back at me? It's not okay but I will fix this. I messed up. It's Rebaone that I love and I am going to fight for her. Who the hell is the person who answered her phone? He's a big fool.

...

[CAPE TOWN]

[DAMIEN]

I still can't believe that we lost. I was really planning to stop Reba's wedding with the help of Jaden but we failed because of what happened to my family. My father suffered a heartache because of what happened and the truth is I am shattered. Jaden is my strength right now. My mom is the weakest of them all.

Oh my God, Reba is married by now and I feel like we failed her. I also failed Jaden. He can never be with the love of his life because of me. He had to come to Cape Town with me and he lost Rebaone to another guy. It's really saddening and frustrating. I have been defeated.

...

[LATER THAT DAY - JOHANNESBURG]

[REBAONE]

I really like Kaden's parents. They are so nice to me. I spent the day with Kaden's mother. We went to the mall and did some "Girls" shopping. It was really nice. Mavis Jones is nothing like my mother, she's really the best. She's a good mother in-law.

...

Me: Mother, do you think that Kaden is home by now?

Mavis: No, he is with his father. They will soon be here.

Me: (Smiles) Let's cook something for them.

Mavis: Okay, dear.

...

We got started in the kitchen.

I never connected with my own mother the way I am connecting with my mother in-law. Is God finally seeing me through? I am not in love with Kaden but I LOVE his mother. Is this even normal?

Kaden and his father came home. We ate together as a family and it was really nice.

...

Me: Mother, thank you for everything. I am going to bed now. It's pretty late.

Mavis: (Smiles) Okay, dear. Good night.

Me: Good night, father.

Denis: (Smiles) Good night, dear.

...

I went to the bedroom and Kaden followed me.

...

Me: Kaden, are you okay?

Kaden: Mhmm.

Me: Are you sure?

Kaden: Yeah.

...

We got to the bedroom and I was shocked when Kaden locked the door and gave me my phone.

...

Me: My phone? I looked for it everywhere.

Kaden: Obviously.

Me: Why did you take it? I thought that I lost it.

Kaden: Who is Bongani?

Me: Huh?

Kaden: Bongani. Who is he?

Me: Uhm... He's my ex boyfriend.

Kaden: Don't lie to me.

Me: I am not lying.

...

He slapped me and I fell down. I was shocked and in tears.

To be continued...

13

[KADEN]

I really can't stand liars. Why is this girl lying to me? I know that Bongani is her boyfriend so she shouldn't lie to me or else I'll kill her right here and right now.

...

Me: Tell the truth.

Rebaone: Kaden, did you just slap me?

Me: Yes, I did. Why are you shocked?

Rebaone: Kaden, I am your wife.

Me: And my wife should not lie to me. Get up and tell me the truth.

Rebaone: What truth do you want?

Me: Who is Bongani?

Rebaone: Bongani is my ex boyfriend. You should ask my parents if you don't believe me.

Me: Oh, so your parents know him?

Rebaone: Yes, they do.

Me: Get up.

...

She got up and wiped away her tears.

God, this girl is really beautiful. Bianca is nothing compared to her.

...

Rebaone: What kind of a man are you?

Me: A good man. I just don't like sharing.

Rebaone: It's not even like you love me.

Me: What do you know?

Rebaone: Kaden, don't repeat this again.

Me: Okay. I am sorry.

Rebaone: Are you really sorry?

Me: Yes, I am. Forget everything and go to bed.

...

She headed to the bathroom.

...

Me: Why are you taking your phone to the bathroom? Do you want to call Bongani?

Rebaone: Just leave me alone.

...

She walked away. My phone rang.

Okay, what does Bianca want? Doesn't she know that I am now a married man?

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Me: Hey, baby.

Bianca: Hey my love, how are you?

Me: I'm okay, just tired. Why are you calling me at this time of the night?

Bianca: I miss you, honey.

Me: Okay.

Bianca: Are you not missing me?

Me: Bianca, I am tired. I'll talk to you tomorrow.

Bianca: Babe, please let me come to you right now.

Me: (Laughs) Are you mad? I have a wife.

Bianca: So what?

Me: Bianca, stop your nonsense. I'll see you tomorrow.

Bianca: Should I come there?

Me: No, I'll come to you.

Bianca: Are you in love with her?

Me: What?

Bianca: You heard me.

...

I hung up on her.

How dare she? I will deal with her tomorrow.

...

[REBAONE]

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Naledi: What? Did you just say that Kaden slapped you?

Me: Yes, Naledi. I just said that.

Naledi: How dare he? And why did he slap you?

Me: Bongani. He doesn't believe that Bongani is my ex boyfriend.

Naledi: What does he believe?

Me: He believes that Bongani is my boyfriend. He told me that he doesn't like sharing.

Naledi: You must tell your parents exactly what happened.

Me: Definitely. I will tell them.

Naledi: And you should also tell his parents.

Me: Yeah I will but after telling my parents.

Naledi: Okay, honey. Do you want me to come over there?

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: No, dear. I am fine. I'll handle this. I just wanted to let you know.

Naledi: Did you consummate the marriage last night?

Me: No, we didn't. I am not ready.

Naledi: (Giggles) But you are always ready for Jaden's D.

Me: (Giggles) You are stupid. I shouldn't have told you about Jaden and I. You will never give me a break.

Naledi: (Laughs) Come on. You know that I love Jaden for you.

Me: You do? Since when?

Naledi: Yes. Since I saw how much he cares about you.

Me: (Smiles) Yeah, he does but he's not attracted to me. He just loves me as a friend.

Naledi: Okay. Well, I will see you tomorrow. Let me get my beauty sleep.

Me: Okay, no problem. Good night.

Naledi: Good night, honey. I love you.

Me: I love you more.

...

I hung up and turned around only to find Kaden standing at the door.

...

Me: Oh, you startled me.

Kaden: Who do you love?

Me: Is that all you heard?

Kaden: Was I supposed to hear more?

Me: No, I... I was just asking.

Kaden: I asked you a question. Who do you love?

Me: My friend.

Kaden: Who's your friend?

Me: Naledi. You met her at the wedding.

Kaden: Were you really talking to Naledi?

Me: Yes, Kaden. I was. Why would I lie to you?

Kaden: I don't trust you.

Me: Wow, thank you. I am glad to know how you feel about me.

Kaden: Show me that you were really talking to Naledi.

...

I don't want to argue with Kaden so I will do exactly what he wants.

...

Me: Okay.

...

I showed him. He came closer to me. I was scared because I thought that he was planning to slap me again.

...

Me: Ka... Kad... Kaden, get back. I didn't do anything wrong.

Kaden: (Smiles) Relax. I won't hurt you but I want to ask you something.

Me: What is it?

Kaden: Why does your phone have a password?

Me: I... Uhm... For privacy.

Kaden: Mhmm. I see. Just don't cheat on me. I won't like it at all.

Me: Okay.

Kaden: Did you tell your friend that I slapped you?

Me: No, I didn't.

Kaden: Okay. That's good. You should always protect your husband no matter what.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Kaden: Why are you quiet? Don't you support what I just said?

Me: Uhm... No... I do. I support what you just said.

Kaden: (Smiles) Good. Will you always protect me?

Me: Yes.

Kaden: Will you also lie for me?

...

I nodded. I agreed to everything he said because I was scared.

...

Kaden: Let's go to bed.

Me: Sure.

Kaden: Are you done in the bathroom?

Me: Uhm... Yeah.

Kaden: Okay, let's go.

...

I wanted to take a shower but I can't because Kaden is not planning to leave the bathroom on his own. I can't take a shower in front of him. I am still not used to him and it looks like he's showing me the side I never knew. He's not like before. He's really scaring me and I feel so uncomfortable around him. God, why did my parents do this to me?

...

Kaden: Honey?

Me: Huh?

Kaden: Lost in thoughts?

Me: Uhm... No. Let's go to bed.

To be continued...

14

[THE NEXT DAY]

[BRIDGET]

Is my daughter lying or what? She just told me that her husband slapped her last night. Wow, I am lost for words.

...

Rebaone: Mom, why are you quiet?

Me: Uhm... Are you sure?

...

Resego walked in.

...

Resego: Why would she lie to you?

Me: I didn't say that she's lying, I asked if she's sure.

Rebaone: Seggo, did you hear what I told mom?

Resego: Yeah, I did. Forgive me for my manners but I wondered why you told me not to be here. How can you not want to talk to me? How can you want to talk to this woman in private?

Rebaone: Resego, you are not married. You won't understand this.

Me: Exactly. She should go back to her bedroom.

Resego: I was never in my bedroom, I was eavesdropping and guess what? I am here to stay. Reba is my sister and I love her.

...

She sat down.

...

Me: Resego, I don't want to argue with you today. Do whatever you want to do.

Resego: Good.

Me: Reba, I will talk to your father about what you told me.

Rebaone: When?

Me: When he comes back from work.

Rebaone: Okay, I want to be here when you talk to him.

Me: No problem.

Resego: What's there to talk about? You should just leave Kaden and be with Jaden.

Me: Jaden? Who is Jaden?

Rebaone: No one, she probably wanted to say Bongani. Look, I need to go. I am meeting up with Naledi at some restaurant. I don't want to be late. I'll see you later.

Me: Okay but please promise me something.

Rebaone: What is it?

Me: Don't tell Naledi about what happened last night.

Resego: I knew it. Bridget is siding with Kaden. I knew it and I am not surprised.

Rebaone: I am also not surprised.

Me: I am not siding with Kaden, I am a married woman and I know exactly what I am saying.

Resego: Do you really know what you are saying?

Me: Yes.

Resego: You don't know anything. You are not even angry that Kaden slapped your daughter. You are so heartless.

Me: Resego, marriage is...

Resego: Girl, bye.

Me: Did you just call me a girl?

...

She walked out of the house.

...

Me: Reba, do you see how your sister is treating me? She doesn't respect me at all.

Rebaone: You are obviously doing something wrong as a mother.

Me: What are you talking about?

Rebaone: I'll see you later. Bye.

...

She got up and left.

What's wrong with my children? They are really ungrateful.

...

[REBAONE]

I gave Resego a lift because mom took her car yesterday after having an argument. Resego actually told me that mom slapped her and took her car.

...

Me: Where are you going?

Resego: To Delano's house.

Me: Resego, are you sexually active?

Resego: (Laughs) Where's that question coming from?

Me: Why are you going to your boyfriend's home if you are not sleeping with him? I am not stupid. I know you.

Resego: Sister, I am not doing anything wrong.

Me: You are in Matric, you better not have a fall out. I don't want us to be like mom one day that's why I believe that school is important. I am not going to allow you to be anyone's housewife.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Resego: I don't want to be anyone's housewife. Bridget went to school and she still allowed her husband to control her. Don't even try to compare her with me. I will never be like her, I am not that stupid.

Me: You should also stop fighting with her.

Resego: Bridget is really annoying.

Me: And she's your mother. You must respect her.

Resego: Fine.

Me: And don't ever mention Jaden's name to anyone again. Especially to our parents.

Resego: Why not?

Me: I don't want anything bad to happen to Jaden. He's nothing like Bongani. He's a good guy.

Resego: Why are you not in love with him if he's a good guy?

Me: Should I go around falling in love with every good man?

Resego: That's not what I said but I wish that he was your husband. You would be Rebaone Mogale-Koetle not Rebaone Mogale-Jones.

Me: (Smiles) I actually love the surname "Jones". I wish that it was Jaden's surname.

Resego: Does that mean you wish that he was your husband?

Me: Uhm... Maybe. He's a good person and he would never slap me like Kaden did.

Resego: Yeah, you are right.

Me: Don't allow Delano to hurt you. You mean a lot to me.

Resego: Yes, sister. I know.

Me: Are you sleeping with him?

Resego: Sister, you passed Delano's house.

Me: Oh, sorry. I talk too much.

...

I stopped the car.

...

Resego: Don't forget me later.

Me: Okay, don't do anything that I wouldn't do.

Resego: Yes, sister.

Me: I love you. Take care.

Resego: I love you too. Take care.

Me: Greet Delano for me.

Resego: Sure.

...

She got out of the car and left.

...

[BIANCA]

Oh, is that Reba? I should go to her and show her the real me.

I walked over to her.

...

Me: Hey, Reba.

Rebaone: Hi, Bianca.

Naledi: Are you not the girl from school?

Me: I don't know you.

Naledi: You don't need to know me. You are such a liar.

Me: Really? Am I?

Rebaone: Naledi, what's going on?

Naledi: This girl lied to you. She's really Kaden's girlfriend and she changed the story not because of your father. She changed it because Kaden beat her up.

Rebaone: And why are you only telling me now?

Me: Because she's scared of me.

Naledi: Scared of you? I am not scared of you. I didn't speak up because Mr Mogale threatened me.

Rebaone: Mr Mogale? Are you talking about my father?

Naledi: Yes, Reba. He knows that Bianca and Kaden are dating.

Rebaone: Wow, I feel so betrayed.

Me: You don't have friends. I don't feel sorry for you because you took my boyfriend away from me. You deserve what's coming your way.

Naledi: Reba, I am very sorry.

Rebaone: Naledi, I feel betrayed by my parents not by you. You were threatened so I understand why you kept the truth from me.

Me: What? Are you stupid? She's not a real friend.

Rebaone: Bianca, what are you doing here?

Me: This is a restaurant. I came to do what you came to do.

Rebaone: Nal, let's go.

Naledi: Sure.

...

They got up and left.

Rebaone, I won't rest until I have turned your life upside down. I will also make sure that I create a rift between you and your friend, Naledi. I will make you pay for agreeing to get married to my boyfriend. This is only the beginning.

To be continued...

15

[REBAONE]

Kaden is really a liar. I have always known my parents to be liars but I didn't know that Kaden would also do this to me.

...

Naledi: Friend, where are we going?

Me: I need everyone to tell me the truth. I already sent them the same message.

Naledi: What message?

Me: I summoned them. I'll see them at home.

Naledi: Maybe I shouldn't be there.

Me: I won't tell them that you told me about Kaden and Bianca. I will tell them that Bianca was the one who told me everything. Don't worry.

Naledi: Okay, no problem.

Me: I will create a rift between Kaden and Bianca, just wait and see.

Naledi: I trust you.

Me: I am not a fool and I won't allow anyone to treat me like one.

Naledi: You are really angry, I have never seen you like this before.

Me: I just feel betrayed, that's all. Kaden slapped me because he believes that I am cheating, it's not okay.

Naledi: Yes, you are right. I will always support you.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

We arrived at home.

...

Me: It's good that you are all here.

Thapelo: What's going on? Your message scared me.

Mavis: Yes dear, what's going on?

Kaden: Honey, is everything okay? What do you want to tell us?

...

I slapped Kaden and left everyone shocked.

...

Me: (Yells) WHO DO YOU THINK YOU ARE, KADEN? YOU LIED TO ME!!!!

...

I looked at everyone.

...

Me: YOU ALL LIED TO ME. YOU ALL KNEW ABOUT KADEN'S GIRLFRIEND, BIANCA AND STILL GOT ME MARRIED TO KADEN. YOU ARE ALL LIARS!!!!

Denis: Honey, please calm down and tell us what happened.

Kaden: I still can't believe that you slapped me.

Me: Are we not equal? You slapped me last night.

Thapelo: He did what?

Me: Don't act like you care, dad. You are the worst father in the entire world.

Mavis: Kaden, did you slap Reba last night?

Kaden: Yes, I did and I apologized for that. We were okay, were we not baby?

Me: Kaden, you slapped me because you think that I am cheating on you.

Thapelo: Tell us exactly what happened last night, honey.

...

I told them everything. They all sided with me and asked Kaden to apologize to me again and to never hit me again.

...

Me: And what about Bianca?

Denis: Kaden and Bianca broke up a long time ago.

Thapelo: Who told you about them? Was it Naledi?

Naledi: No sir, it was not me.

Thapelo: You are lying.

Me: She's not lying. She didn't tell me anything.

Thapelo: Who told you?

Me: Bianca.

Kaden: What? Are you serious?

Me: Yes. I was at the restaurant a while ago with Naledi when Bianca joined us. She told us everything and she told us that you slept with her yesterday.

Kaden: Do you believe her?

Me: Did you not believe Bongani over me?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: I thought as much. Naledi, let's go.

Naledi: Yeah, sure.

...

We left.

...

Naledi: Babe, Kaden looks sorry.

Me: Yeah, I know. I am willing to give him another chance.

Naledi: What about Bianca?

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: I don't know. He can be with her but he must also allow me to be with anyone I want. This marriage is a lie.

Naledi: I am so sorry for everything.

Me: Don't be. This must be my destiny.

Naledi: You can change it. Be with Jaden.

Me: Jaden is not interested in me but I will continue to have fun with him.

Naledi: Sure, no problem.

...

Jaden phoned me.

...

Me: Jaden is calling, please drive. Let's swap seats.

Naledi: Okay, babe.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Me: Hey Mr Koetle.

Jaden: Mr Koetle?

Me: Isn't that your surname?

Jaden: (Laughs) No, is that a Sotho surname?

Me: Yeah.

Jaden: I'm not Sotho.

Me: Yeah, right. How are you, dear?

Jaden: I'm fine thanks and how are you?

Me: I am okay thanks. I miss you. When are you coming back?

Jaden: I miss you more. I will come back soon.

Me: When is soon?

Jaden: Reba, I don't want to promise you anything. Things are still bad this side.

Me: Okay, I understand. How's Damien?

Jaden: He's not good at all but he will be fine.

Me: I will pray for him.

Jaden: Thank you. How's your husband?

Me: He's fine.

Jaden: Is he treating you good?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: Are you there?

Me: Uhh... Yeah... He's treating me good.

Jaden: Are you falling in love with him?

Me: No, I am not and I'm not planning to fall in love with him.

Jaden: Why not? Is it because of Bongani?

Me: No. I am so confused.

Jaden: Why are you confused?

Me: Jaden, come back very soon.

Jaden: Are you okay?

Me: Do you think that I'm beautiful?

Jaden: Yes, you are very beautiful.

Me: Would you ever fall in love with me?

Jaden: Reba, please stop it.

Me: Okay, I got the answer.

Jaden: What's the answer?

Me: I am not your type.

Jaden: That's not true.

Me: It's true but I understand. We can just be sex partners, I don't mind.

Jaden: Rebaone, I will talk to you about this face to face.

Me: Okay, handsome. Take care of yourself.

Jaden: Thank you. You must also take care of yourself.

Me: Sure.

Jaden: Bye, I'll call you later.

Me: Bye. Please greet Damien for me.

Jaden: Sure. No problem.

Me: Bye.

Jaden: Oh, wait.

Me: Yeah?

Jaden: My surname is not Koetle, my surname is Jones.

Me: WHAT???

Jaden: I'll talk to you later, I promise. Bye.

...

He hung up.

Did he just say that his surname is Jones? How? He's Mackenzie's brother and Mackenzie told me that her surname is Koetle. What's going on here? Who's playing games with me? JONES???

To be continued...

16

[NALEDI]

Me: What's up? You look shocked.

Rebaone: Am I dreaming?

Me: Uhm... No.

Rebaone: Please pinch me.

Me: Huh?

Rebaone: Naledi, pinch me.

Me: I'm driving.

Rebaone: Come on, Naledi. It's not your first time driving. Pinch me.

Me: What's going on? You are really acting strange.

Rebaone: It's surreal.

Me: What is surreal?

Rebaone: Everything. Hold on, I need to call Damien.

Me: Please tell me what's going on, you are worrying me.

Rebaone: Wait, I'll tell you everything after talking to Damien.

Me: Okay, no problem.

...

[REBAONE]

I phoned Damien right away.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Damien: Hey, Reba.

Me: Are you with Jaden right now?

Damien: No, why?

Me: What's going on, Damien?

Damien: What are you talking about?

Me: Did all of you conspire against me?

Damien: What are you talking about?

Me: I am married to the man I don't love. You promised to stop the wedding but you didn't.

Damien: I couldn't stop your wedding because...

Me: Because you never planned to stop it.

Damien: That's not true.

Me: It's true. You betrayed me.

Damien: Reba, what are you talking about?

Me: You all conspired with my parents to destroy my life.

Damien: Oh my God.

Me: Which God? What do you know about God? All you know is betrayal.

Damien: Reba, I am really going through a lot. Don't do this to me.

Me: Did your parents' house really burn down?

Damien: Yes, it did. I sent you pictures.

Me: Fine. Let me ask you something.

Damien: Sure.

Me: Why didn't you ask for his pictures?

Damien: Whose pictures?

Me: My husband's pictures.

Damien: I don't know. I guess it's because I am not interested in seeing him.

Me: Or you already know him.

Damien: How do I know him?

Me: Please tell me something.

Damien: Yeah?

Me: Is Jaden's surname Koetle or Jones?

Damien: Jones.

Me: And what's Mackenzie's surname?

Damien: Jones.

Me: (Cries) Why did you all do this to me? What have I done?

Damien: Reba, what are you talking about?

Me: Should I really tell you something you already know?

Damien: I don't know anything. I am lost. Please don't cry and tell me what's happening.

Me: I am very stupid, that's what is happening right now. She kept saying Jaden instead of Kaden and I didn't get anything because I am a big fool.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Damien: Who kept saying Jaden instead of Kaden?

Me: Bye, Damien. Thanks a lot.

Damien: Reb...

...

I hung up and cried my eyes out.

Everything is finally clear. Jaden and Kaden are brothers. Jaden and Mackenzie are the other children Mavis was talking about. I

am such a fool. The Jones and The Mogales conspired against me. I have been defeated once again. I am a big fool.

...

Naledi: Reba, what's going on?

Me: Drive to the hospital.

Naledi: Please talk to me. Are we not best friends?

...

She pulled the car over next to the road and hugged me.

...

Me: I am a fool, Nal.

Naledi: What happened?

Me: Jaden's surname is Jones.

Naledi: So?

Me: Don't you get it?

Naledi: Get what?

Me: Jaden and Kaden are brothers and Mackenzie is their little sister.

Naledi: No, that's impossible.

Me: Nal, believe me. Everyone conspired against me.

Naledi: Didn't you tell me that Jaden's surname is Koetle?

Me: That's what Mackenzie told me. The Jones and The Mogales are working together. Jaden, Damien and Mackenzie already knew me when they came into my life.

...

Naledi kept quiet.

...

Me: Why are you quiet?

Naledi: Reba, what are you telling me?

Me: I am simply telling you the truth.

Naledi: Uhm... Did Damien tell you that Kaden is Jaden's brother?

Me: No. I just came to that conclusion on my own.

Naledi: And you could be wrong.

Me: My instincts are telling me that I am right.

Naledi: Instincts can lie.

Me: On whose side are you?

Naledi: Babe, I will always side with you but this is too much. You can't jump to such conclusion.

Me: What do you want me to do?

Naledi: I don't know but I trust Damien, Jaden and Mackenzie.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Naledi: Please say something.

Me: You are not helping. You are making things difficult for me.

Naledi: I am so sorry but I don't want you to conclude without thinking about this.

...

God, what's going on? I feel betrayed and my friend is telling me that I could be wrong about everything. Are my instincts really lying to me? What's going on?

...

Naledi: Please say something.

Me: Just drive to the hospital.

Naledi: For what? What are you going to do there?

Me: Just drive me to the hospital.

Naledi: You are scaring me.

Me: Please promise me something.

Naledi: What is it?

Me: Promise me that you won't tell anyone about what I just told you. I need to get to the bottom of this.

Naledi: Okay, dear. I promise to keep my mouth shut.

Me: Thank you. Please start driving.

Naledi: Sure.

To be continued...

17

[NALEDI]

Me: We are here. What's going on?

Rebaone: Stay right here, I'll be back.

Me: Where are you going?

Rebaone: Inside.

Me: To do what?

Rebaone: Honey, I'll talk to you when I get back. Just wait for me.

Me: Reba, you are really scaring me.

Rebaone: I'm not doing anything wrong. Why are you getting scared?

Me: Tell me why we are here,

Rebaone: I want the truth. Wasn't Jaden my husband when I was here? He must have signed some papers.

Me: Okay.

Rebaone: I'll see you in a jiffy.

Me: Sure.

...

She got out of the car and walked in. I got a call from Damien.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Me: Hey, Damien.

Damien: Hey, how are you?

Me: I'm okay thanks and you?

Damien: I'm good. Is everything okay with Reba?

Me: Why are you asking?

...

He started telling me about the call he had with Reba.

...

Me: Uhh... Wow.

Damien: Do you have any idea of what's happening?

Me: No, I haven't seen Reba today but I will talk to her, don't worry.

Damien: Okay, thank you so much and please take care of her.

Me: I will.

Damien: Bye, I'll talk to you later.

Me: Sure.

...

He hung up. Reba came back.

...

Me: Is everything okay?

Rebaone: I know the truth and the nurse revealed more to me.

Me: Tell me.

...

She gave me a photo.

...

Rebaone: Please look at it and tell me the names of the people appearing on the photo.

Me: This photo is small but okay, let me try.

...

I did as she told me.

...

Me: Oh my God. I see Mackenzie, Mrs Jones, Mr Jones, Kaden and Jaden.

Rebaone: Exactly. What does that tell you?

Me: You were right all along. Where did you get this photo?

Rebaone: From the nurse. She told me that it fell out of Jaden's wallet the time he was paying the hospital bills. She noticed only when we were already gone.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Rebaone: Uhm... Jaden's surname is really Jones. The nurse showed me the documents he signed. She only agreed to show me the documents signed by Jaden because she is still under the impression that Jaden is my husband.

Me: Oh my God, this is wrong. They betrayed you.

Rebaone: He took away my virginity. I feel like a fool.

Me: I am so sorry, Reba. You don't deserve this.

Rebaone: What have I done to my parents? Why did they do this to me?

Me: I am sorry.

Rebaone: I am tired. This pain is unbearable. I am really tired, Nal.

Me: Please don't do anything stupid. You will be fine. I know that you are strong.

Rebaone: Am I constantly getting hurt because I am strong?

Me: No, that's not what I meant.

Rebaone: Mavis is exactly like Bridget, I can't believe that I thought she was better than Bridget. They are exactly the same. I don't have anyone.

Me: Don't say that. You have me and you also have Resego.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Rebaone: I know but what can the two of you do to my parents? Nothing!!!

...

Truly speaking, I also feel defeated. I trusted Jaden, Damien and Mackenzie blindly. I feel like a fool. My friend is hurting and I can't do anything because I'm also scared of The Mogales.

...

Rebaone: Please drive.

Me: Where to?

Rebaone: To your place. I want to book a plane ticket. I don't have data, I'll use your WiFi.

Me: Plane ticket? Why?

Rebaone: I want to go to Cape Town as soon as possible.

Me: Do you want to confront Jaden, Damien and Mackenzie?

Rebaone: Yes, I want to do that. I want to know why they did what they did.

Me: You don't have to confront them. You can just confront the ones that are around.

Rebaone: My heart does not want to believe that Jaden, Damien and Mackenzie betrayed me that's why I want to talk to them.

Me: Does your heart believe that Jaden's parents, Kaden and your parents really betrayed you?

Rebaone: Yes.

Me: Why does it believe that?

Rebaone: Nah, I don't know.

Me: Babe, listen. What if Jaden is really in the dark about what's happening?

Rebaone: Why do you say that?

Me: Didn't you tell me that he doesn't really get along with his parents and brother?

Rebaone: Yeah, I did.

Me: Rebaone Mogale, I know you. You never think straight when you are sad. You always jump into conclusion without

proper thinking and you always regret when you are finally okay.

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Say something.

Rebaone: What's your point?

Me: My point is that you should think about everything. Take your time and think about everything. Don't jump into conclusion. I am not going to lie to you, I am also confused. My head is all over the place and I don't know what to believe but please calm down. Heal first and conclude.

Rebaone: Will I ever heal?

Me: Yes, you are stronger than this.

...

She kept quiet. I drove to my place and asked Resego to come over. I told Resego everything and I wasn't shocked by her behavior.

Resego's blood is always boiling. She's a very angry girl.

...

Rebaone: Resego, calm down. Must you always act this way?

Resego: I AM TELLING YOU RIGHT NOW. BUY A GUN AND SHOOT THEM. THEY REALLY BETRAYED YOU!!!!

Rebaone: Stop yelling.

Resego: HOW CAN I NOT YELL? THIS IS NOT OKAY. I AM FUMING. BUY A GUN AND...

Rebaone: RESEGO!!!

Resego: WHAT???

Rebaone: Resego Mogale, you are really getting on my nerves. Calm down and give me a break.

Resego: I am sorry.

Rebaone: I am also hurt but Naledi is right. I shouldn't jump into conclusion. My heart is really telling me that Jaden, Damien and Mackenzie are innocent.

Me: I have an idea.

Rebaone: Yeah?

Me: Uhm... Ask them.

Resego: No Naledi. They are just going to lie to her.

Me: But what can she possibly lose? She won't lose anything whether they lie or tell the truth. I mean... Uhm... She already knows that Kaden and Jaden are brothers.

Rebaone: Yeah, I won't lose anything because the big truth is out.

Me: Exactly my point.

Rebaone: Okay, there's a flight for 23:15. Should I take it?

Resego: Why so late?

Rebaone: The others are already full.

Resego: Okay.

Rebaone: Should I book it?

Me: Yeah, sure. I am coming with you.

Resego: Me too.

Rebaone: Fine. Let's spend Thapelo's money.

Me: I have been meaning to ask. Why do you have your father's bank card?

Rebaone: (Smiles) He gave it to me on my wedding day. He thinks that my happiness will be found in the card. He's trying to buy my silence. He wants me to act like everything is fine and that I will live happily with Kaden.

Resego: (Laughs) What a fool. How much did he say you should take per month?

Rebaone: R5 000.

Resego: Will you only take that amount?

Me: Sego, my friend is not a fool.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Exactly. I am not a fool. Thapelo will regret trusting me with his money. I am very responsible especially when it comes to money but why should I take care of Thapelo's money? Didn't he force me to get married? He will regret trusting me with his money. We are going to Cape Town.

To be continued...

18

[KADEN]

What is this I'm hearing? What is Rebaone going to do in Cape Town? Firstly she slapped me in front of everyone and now she's telling me that she's going to Cape Town tonight? Is she mad?

...

Rebaone: Kay, why are you quiet?

Me: What do you want me to say? You always do as you want. You still act single.

Rebaone: Come on, I told you that I have to be there. It's school related.

...

Should I allow her to go to Cape Town?

...

Rebaone: Kay?

Me: Are you mad at me?

Rebaone: No, I am not.

Me: I took care of Bianca. She won't bother us anymore.

Rebaone: This is not about Bianca, it's about me.

Me: Are you going with Bongani?

Rebaone: Why would I go with him?

Me: You go to the same campus and the same class.

Rebaone: How do you know?

Me: Uhm... I know everything.

Rebaone: Have you been investigating me?

Me: Yes, is that wrong? Are you not my wife?

Rebaone: I am but you don't have a right to do that.

Me: Rebaone, you will see what will happen to you after a week.

Rebaone: What do you mean?

Me: I am not telling you anything.

...

Honestly speaking, this girl does not respect me at all. She speaks to me like I'm her friend, Naledi. It's okay, I will be tough with her after a week. She will learn to be nice to me and respect me. She's not even giving me the cake but it's fine, I will take it next week. Is she not my wife? I own her. She's now my property.

...

Rebaone: Why are you quiet?

Me: What can I possibly say to you? Leave me alone.

Rebaone: Are you allowing me to go to Cape Town?

...

Bianca walked in.

God, why is this girl here? Who let her in? And did she have to come straight to my bedroom?

...

Bianca: Rebaone, leave.

Rebaone: Excuse me?

Bianca: You heard me.

Rebaone: I am not going anywhere. This is also my room.

Me: Bianca, why are you here?

Bianca: I want to talk to you.

Me: Okay.

Bianca: In private.

Me: Rebaone, leave us.

Rebaone: Who? Me? In your dreams. I am not going anywhere.

...

Did this girl just disrespect me in front of Bianca? What is she teaching her? To disrespect me? This is not good for me. She won't get away with this.

...

Me: Rebaone, I am being nice right now.

Rebaone: I am also being nice. You don't want to make me angry. I will turn the house upside down. Leave me alone.

Bianca: Wow, are you disrespecting my boyfriend in front of me?

Rebaone: Oh, so the two of you are still dating? Are you asking me to leave so...

Me: Rebaone?

Rebaone: What?

Me: You don't want to cross me.

Rebaone: You also don't want to cross me. I know that Bianca is bruised because of you. You beat her up, didn't you?

...

She's really provoking me.

...

Me: Bianca, are you just going to stand there and keep quiet?

Bianca: Uhm... Uhhh... No, I am sorry.

Me: Why are you sorry? This is your fault. Get out of my room.

Bianca: Baby, I...

Me: (Shouts) BIANCA, LEAVE THIS HOUSE RIGHT NOW OR ELSE I WILL KILL YOU. TODAY MY WIFE DISRESPECTED ME BECAUSE OF YOU. WHY ARE YOU EVEN HERE? DIDN'T I TELL YOU NOT TO COME HERE UNTIL I SAY SO?

Rebaone: Oh, so you...

Me: REBAONE, SHUT UP!!!

Bianca: (Cries) Baby, I am sorry but please...

Me: I TOLD YOU THAT BIG GIRLS DON'T CRY. GET OUT RIGHT NOW!!!

Bianca: Rebaone, you will regret this.

...

She left.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">I am really angry.
What is wrong with these girls? Do they want to turn my life upside down?

I looked at Rebaone.

...

Rebaone: [God, what have I done? I am as good as dead. I made Kaden angry and he looks like he wants to kill me.]

Me: Aren't you going to say anything?

Rebaone: Uhm... I... I am sorry. Please blame the devil.

Me: Are you the devil?

Rebaone: No.

Me: Well, I blame you.

Rebaone: But you just blamed Bianca. Why are you now blaming me?

Me: (Shouts) I CAN BLAME ANYONE I WANT TO BLAME. I CAN EVEN BLAME THAT FOOLISH JADEN OR DAMIEN. I CAN EVEN BLAME MY MOTHER BUT RIGHT NOW I WANT TO BLAME YOU!!!

Rebaone: Jaden? Who is Jaden?

Me: IT'S MY STUPID BROTHER. DO YOU KNOW WHAT I AM CAPABLE OF? STOP MAKING ME MAD. I WILL BURN YOU ALIVE. I BURNT DOWN DAMIEN'S PARENTS' HOUSE SO THAT HE DOESN'T GET TO ATTEND THE WEDDING WITH JADEN AND I SENT MACKENZIE TO CAPE TOWN TO TAKE CARE OF THE FAMILY BUSINESS. WHY DID I DO ALL OF THIS? WELL, I DIDN'T

WANT THOSE THREE TO ATTEND MY WEDDING. I DID EVERYTHING BECAUSE MY DAD ASKED ME TO DO SO!!!

Rebaone: [Woah, this is the real Kaden. He confesses when he's angry. He just made things easy for me. He told me what I actually wanted to hear. I should continue to make him angry. He might hit me but it's fine, I will know the truth.]

...

How did this girl get to make me this angry in less than twenty minutes? I am so angry.

...

Rebaone: Kaden, you are not a man. You are a weakling that's why you hit women. You don't scare me at all.

Me: WHAT DID YOU SAY?

Rebaone: You heard me. Who is Damien?

Me: DAMIEN IS MY BROTHER'S FRIEND AND HE'S EXACTLY LIKE MY BROTHER!!!

Rebaone: And who is Mackenzie?

Me: SHE'S MY SISTER. SHE'S THE SAME AGE AS YOU AND EXACTLY LIKE YOU. SHE'S ALWAYS GETTING ON MY NERVES JUST LIKE YOU!!!

Rebaone: Why is it that you didn't want those three to attend our wedding?

Me: BECAUSE THEY WERE GOING TO STOP IT. THEY ARE TOO GOOD. STOP ANNOYING ME AND GIVE ME YOUR PHONE!!!

...

I walked to the bathroom to wash my face.

...

[REBAONE]

Oh my God, I have all the answers. Jaden, Damien and Mackenzie are innocent. Wow, Kaden and his parents are so evil. Denis told Kaden to do everything that he did to Damien's parents. It's not okay. I have to tell Damien the truth.

I dialed Damien's number and ran out of the room but Kaden came running after me and took my phone.

...

Me: Kaden, give me my phone.

Kaden: I asked for it.

Me: What do you want to do with it?

Kaden: I want to teach you a lesson for disrespecting me. You called me a weakling and you disrespected me and belittled me in front of Bianca.

...

He smashed my phone against the wall until it was hardly recognized.

...

Me: Kaden, what have you done? That phone was R13 500 when I bought it. Why did you break it?

Kaden: I can buy you a phone more expensive than this one.

Me: It's not about that. I value my things.

Kaden: What iPhone is this? Wait, why am I having this conversation with you? Come with me.

...

I attempted to run away but he caught me and locked me up in the attic.

God, what do I do? Nobody ever comes to the attic. I am doomed.

...

[NALEDI]

I am so excited to be going to Cape Town. I know that Reba is hurting but she's going to end up having fun. She's my friend, I know her.

I was jogging when some men got out of the car and used force to get me in.

...

Me: Please don't kill me, I didn't do anything wrong.

Man1: Just be a good girl. We don't want to hurt you.

Me: Who are you?

Man1: We just want to save your life.

Me: But I don't know you.

Man2: You talk too much. Just keep quiet

...

The driver began to drive.

I am so scared. I don't know what's really going on.

I looked at the person driving and I was shocked to see that it was Kaden all along.

...

Me: Kaden? You?

...

He looked at me, smiled and winked.

...

Me: What is going on, Kaden?

Kaden: What do you think is going on?

Me: Kaden, stop the car right now or else...

Kaden: Or else what? I am just saving your life. Just stay still.

Me: Saving me from what?

Kaden: Cape Town.

Me: What?

To be continued...

19

[REBAONE]

Oh, I can't believe this. Kaden also kidnapped Naledi. This is madness. Look at how scared Naledi is.

...

Me: Uhh... Hey baby.

Naledi: Hey, friend.

Me: I am so sorry.

Naledi: No, it's not your fault. Did he hurt you?

Me: No, he didn't but he hurt my phone.

Naledi: (Laughs) You really loved it, I am sorry.

Me: He will replace it. He won't get away with this.

Naledi: So why are we kidnapped? Is it because of Cape Town?

Me: Yeah and whose fault is it?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Nal?

Naledi: It's my fault.

Me: Yeah it is. You asked me to tell him about our trip to Cape Town. Look where we are now.

Naledi: I'm sorry friend. I asked you to tell him because I didn't want him to hit you when we come back from Cape Town.

Me: I know. It's okay. What do we do now?

Naledi: I... I don't know.

Me: Where's your phone?

Naledi: Kaden took it and switched it off.

Me: Where did he find you?

Naledi: Not too far away from my place. I was jogging.

Me: Well, we are stuck here.

Naledi: Can't we escape?

Me: No. I tried. I have been here for an hour.

Naledi: Bye, Cape Town.

Me: Yeah. Bye, Cape Town.

Naledi: I am hungry.

Me: Me too.

...

We laughed.

...

Me: What kind of a man is Kaden?

Naledi: I don't know.

Me: Bipolar is ruining his life.

Naledi: You can say that again. He's really crazy.

Me: I am so happy to be here with you.

Naledi: (Smiles) Me too. We will never separate until death do us part.

Me: (Smiles) Awesome.

...

[RESEGO]

I don't feel okay. I tried calling my sister but the call is not going through and I also tried calling Naledi to no avail. What am I going to do now? We are supposed to leave tonight. Did Kaden hurt my sister?

I went to Bridget's room.

...

Bridget: Hey honey.

Me: Hey Bridget, something is wrong.

Bridget: What's wrong?

Me: Reba is in trouble.

Bridget: Is that what she said?

Me: No, I have a feeling.

Bridget: (Laughs) Baby, please give me a break.

...

Thuso walked in and he sided with me for the first time in his life. I mean he's always in his own world.

...

Thuso: Mom, please listen to Resego. She might be right.

Bridget: Really? Why are you saying that?

Thuso: I had a dream.

Bridget: About what?

Thuso: Reba. She was screaming for help in an isolated place. I couldn't tell what that place was.

Bridget: It was just a nightmare honey, forget about it.

Me: Bridget, trust your children for once.

Bridget: Have you tried calling Reba?

Me: Yes and the call is not going through.

Bridget: And what about you, son?

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Thuso: I did the same and couldn't get hold of her.

Bridget: Uhm... Okay, I'll call your father right away.

Thuso: He's in the study. I will call him for you.

Bridget: Okay, dear.

...

Thuso called Thapelo. I personally told Thapelo everything. Surprisingly he took me serious straight away.

...

Thapelo: Let me call Kaden.

Me: Kaden is going to lie to you. He's probably the reason why Reba is nowhere to be found.

Thuso: I also don't trust Kaden.

Thapelo: Since when? What did he do to you?

Thuso: Daddy, I have seen how Kaden is. He's two faced. I know a snake and Kaden is...

Thapelo: ENOUGH!!!

Me: Your son is speaking up for the first time and you want him to keep quiet? Why?

Thapelo: Kaden is your sister's husband and he should be respected.

Bridget: But honey, you know what happened. Reba slapped Kaden in front of everyone. Kaden must be angry.

Me: Exactly.

Thapelo: Do you think so?

Bridget: Yes, I do.

Thapelo: Let's go to The Jones house. I need to talk to Kaden and his parents.

Bridget: Okay, let's go.

Thuso: Should we come along?

Thapelo: No, stay at home.

Me: I am not staying at home. I am coming with you.

Bridget: You are so stubborn, Resego. Just st...

Thapelo: It's okay, honey. Let's not waste time by arguing. We will all go.

Bridget: Okay.

...

We all left.

...

[DENIS]

God, I still wonder what's happening. Kaden is so happy today and he's never this happy.

...

Me: Son, what have you done or what do you want?

Kaden: What are you talking about?

Me: You look very happy.

Kaden: I'm a married man that's why I'm happy.

...

My wife walked in with The Mogales.

...

Mavis: Look who came to visit us.

Kaden: (Smiles) My in-laws.

Thapelo: Where is my daughter?

Kaden: Your daughter? Uhh... She went out with her friend.

Resego: I don't believe you. What did you do to my sister?

Kaden: I don't know what you are talking about.

Bridget: Kaden, are you mad at her? Please don't punish her. She didn't mean to slap you.

Kaden: Mother in-law, I didn't do anything.

Me: You are lying, son.

Kaden: Dad?

Me: What? Are you not my son?

Kaden: I am that's why you should side with me. I didn't do anything.

Me: Kaden, I know you. Tell us where your wife is.

Kaden: (Yells) I'M TIRED OF BEING TREATED LIKE THIS. I DIDN'T DO ANYTHING WRONG. WHY AM I ALWAYS SUSPECTED?

Me: Don't yell when talking to me. I am your father and you are who you are today because of me. Respect me.

Kaden: DAD, YOU ARE ALWAYS TREATING ME LIKE AN OUTSIDER THAT'S WHY YOU FORCED ME TO GET MARRIED. YOU ALWAYS FORCE ME TO DO THINGS AND JADEN IS NEVER FORCED. YOU FORCED ME TO GET PEOPLE TO BURN DOWN DAMIEN'S PARENTS' HOUSE. I DID EVERYTHING FOR YOU BECAUSE I AM A GOOD SON BUT YOU CARE MORE ABOUT JADEN. I WILL KILL HIM!!!

...

I gave him a slap and he spoke softly but anger was written all over his face.

...

Kaden: Did you slap me because of Jaden or because of Rebaone?

Resego: Kaden, wow. Finally everything is clear now. You are the bad person here. You are nothing like Jaden.

Mavis: Do you know Jaden?

Resego: Yes, I know him very well. He's Reba's boyfriend. He loves Reba so much and he treats her good. He's a true definition of gentleman. He loves Reba and he will never stop loving her no matter what.

Me, Mavis, Denis, Bridget & Kaden: WHAT?????????

To be continued...

20

[RESEGO]

Resego Mogale, what have you done? Do you want everyone to kill your sister? Are you stupid? Your sister is not even into Jaden. She can't be killed for nothing. Oh my God, I need to fix this.

...

Me: Uhm... (Laughs) Look at all of you. I got you.

Mavis: Resego, what's going on?

Me: I lied because I wanted to see Kaden's reaction.

Mavis: Do you know Jaden?

Me: No, who's Jaden?

Kaden: Hold on, are you telling us that you spoke about someone you don't know?

Me: Yeah, I heard how you said you will kill him so I had to hurt you. Clearly you hate Jaden.

Kaden: I don't hate Jaden.

Me: Who is Jaden?

Mavis: Kaden's twin brother.

...

Uhm... Let me act like I don't know anything.

...

Me: Identical?

Mavis: No, not identical.

Me: Why was he not at the wedding?

Mavis: It's a long story.

Me: I have the whole day.

Kaden: Well, we don't. Don't ever joke like that again. I will never be able to share Reba with anyone.

Me: Would you kill for her?

Kaden: Yes, even if I have to kill my brother. Nobody is...

Denis: Kaden, leave Jaden out of this. Jaden would never do anything to betray you.

Mavis: Jaden will never be with your wife unless he doesn't know her. We should introduce him to your wife as soon as possible.

...

Oh Jesus, I just got away with everything I said but I don't understand why Bridget is looking at me the way she's looking at me. Does she believe that Jaden loves Reba?

...

[KADEN]

What's mine is mine and I can never share it. Jaden and Rebaone? Hell no, I would kill someone. Well, it's good that this stupid girl was just lying in order to hurt me but believe me when I say that she got me.

...

Me: Jaden will be back soon. He will meet my wife.

Thapelo: And where's your wife?

Me: Mr Mogale, you know me. I can never lie to you. Reba went out with her friend, Naledi. They are going to Cape Town tonight so they went to the shops to buy some things.

Bridget: Cape Town? Are you sure?

Me: Yes, I am very sure. She told me everything and I gave her permission. You can ask Resego, she knows.

Resego: How do I know? I wasn't there when she told you about the Cape Town trip.

Me: Yes, you were not there but you know about the Cape Town trip. Aren't you also going to Cape Town?

...

She kept quiet.

Girl, I have been alive for Twenty Four Years. I am not stupid, I know how to turn the tables and clear my name. I am very smart and I always get away with everything. You are a baby, don't play this game with me.

...

Bridget: Resego, speak up. Why are you quiet? Are you going to Cape Town?

Resego: Yes, I am.

Thapelo: You knew about the Cape Town trip and still played us? Are we the same age as you?

Resego: I didn't play you.

Me: You played them. You knew about the Cape Town trip and you are also well aware of the fact that Reba and Naledi went to the shops.

Resego: That's not true, I...

Thapelo: Kaden, I believe you. I was worried for nothing. I am sorry.

Resego: But...

Thapelo: Keep quiet. This is all your fault, Resego.

...

I looked at Resego and winked.

...

Resego: Thapelo, this boy is lying to you.

Bridget: Which boy? Is Kaden your age mate? Go to the car.

Resego: Please listen to me, something is not right.

Thapelo: Resego?

Resego: Yes?

Thapelo: Go to the car. We will be right there.

...

She stepped on my shoe and walked out. She was really fuming.

Thuso followed her.

...

Thapelo: Son, I am very sorry about everything.

Me: (Smiles) It's okay.

Thapelo: We should get going.

...

They said their goodbyes and left.

...

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Dad, I...

...

My father walked out on me and obviously my mother followed him.

Kaden Jones, you are smart. You will act sorry in front of your father and your father will forgive you. Aren't you very manipulative? You can do this but right now you need to check up on your wife and her friend.

...

[RESEGO]

Wow, I look like a liar now. Kaden made me look like a liar and a hater in front of everyone. Thapelo and Bridget are so angry and they are not talking to me. They are not even trying to give me a chance to explain myself.

We arrived at home and I went straight to my room. Thuso followed me.

...

Me: What do you want? Are you here to call me a liar and a hater?

Thuso: No.

Me: So why are you in my room?

Thuso: Segoo, I believe you.

Me: What are you talking about?

Thuso: Everything. I may be Fifteen Years of age but I...

Me: Do you really believe me?

Thuso: Yes, I do. I am sorry that everyone does not believe you.

Me: (Smiles) Do you have a girlfriend?

Thuso: No, why?

Me: You have been mute for so long. You never sided with me.

Thuso: I never sided with anyone because I was still observing.

Me: Observing? For so long?

Thuso: Yes, I had to take my time.

Me: (Smiles) You are lying. You have a girlfriend.

Thuso: Believe whatever you want to believe.

Me: (Giggles) Okay baby. Well, thank you.

Thuso: You are welcome.

Me: Do you believe that Reba went to the shops?

Thuso: No, Reba is somewhere in The Jones house.

Me: Do you think so?

Thuso: Yes, my eyes were on Kaden the entire time. He kept looking around and up, I don't know why.

Me: And he had a smirk on his face.

Thuso: A very irritating smirk.

Me: (Smiles) Wow, I love the new Thuso. I can't wait to meet your girlfriend. She is doing a good job. Look at you, you are so helpful and not boring.

Thuso: Well, I really don't have a girlfriend.

Me: Whatever, dude.

...

Thuso walked over to the door and locked it.

...

Thuso: Jaden Jones...

Me: What about him?

Thuso: Is he the same person who was here with Reba?

Me: I don't know what you are talking about.

Thuso: You know exactly what I am talking about. Jaden was here with Reba and Reba was badly injured and using the wheelchair. You packed Reba's belongings and gave them to her. I saw everything and don't ask me where I was. This happened months back. True or false?

...

My jaws literally dropped. I was shocked.

Thuso is actually very smart. He's a real spy. I need him.

...

Thuso: True or false?

Me: Uhm... Can I trust you?

Thuso: It's up to you. Don't forget that I haven't told anyone what I saw. I believe that you should trust me.

Me: But you told Bridget about the things I took from Reba's room.

Thuso: I just wanted to see if you are smart or not.

Me: And...?

Thuso: Yeah. You are very smart. You managed to fool her. You told her something about a strike and she believed you. Reba lived with Jaden for weeks until she got better.

Me: Who are you?

Thuso: I am the person who is willing to fight for my sisters. I am Thuso Mogale and I will not rest until Bridget and Thapelo are taught a lesson.

God, am I dreaming? Is this boy not Fifteen Years Old? So what's all this?

Me: Well, you are right about everything you said.

Thuso: Jaden is the one who loves Reba, not Kaden. Kaden only loves himself and I am going to expose him.

Me: Are we now a team?

Thuso: (Winks) Yeah but we should look for Reba in The Jones house. She's there.

Me: But where are we going to start looking?

Thuso: Uhm... Well, Kaden was looking around and he also couldn't stop looking up. We will also...

Me: Hold on, didn't you say that Reba was locked in an isolated place?

Thuso: In the dream, yeah.

Me: What's... Hold on, what about the basement?

Thuso: (Smiles) You are smart but what about the Attic?

Me: (Smiles) The Attic?

Thuso: Yeah. The Attic.

To be continued...

21

[A WEEK LATER]

[JADEN]

I am happy that everything is fine this side so I am going home today and I'm going with Mackenzie. I'll be in Johannesburg today and I can't wait to see Reba.

...

Me: Mackenzie, hurry up.

Mackenzie: Yeah, relax.

Me: Don't tell me to relax, we are going to miss our flight.

Mackenzie: We still have an hour.

Me: Stop being stubborn and hurry up or else I'm leaving you behind. Your friend is not going back with us that's why you want to be left behind. You want to be here with her.

Mackenzie: You haven't heard from Reba, this is why you are mad at me.

Me: Whatever, Mackenzie.

Mackenzie: I tried to help you but I failed. I tried to call Naledi and Resego but I couldn't get hold of them.

Me: Reba went to honeymoon with her husband, it's fine.

Mackenzie: It's not fine. You love her so much.

Me: That's not true.

Mackenzie: Men can be very annoying. Why are you in denial?
Am I a fool?

Me: Mackenzie, let's go.

Mackenzie: Fine, Jaden. Whatever you want. Continue to suffer on your own and push everyone away.

Me: You can be very annoying. You talk too much.

Mackenzie: And you have a problem with people who tell it like it is.

Me: That's not true.

Mackenzie: I don't want to talk to you about this again. I'm done, let's go.

Me: Fine.

...

We left the house.

Mackenzie: Did you leave the key for Damien?

Me: He has his own key.

Mackenzie: Okay. Johannesburg, here we come.

...

[REBAONE]

My life is like a rollercoaster. This is not the life I wanted when I finished High School but guess what? It's what I got. I am married to the man I don't love and he kept me in the attic with my friend and my siblings. But I still don't know how Thuso and Resego managed to get themselves kidnapped. They are foolish. Couldn't they come here with the cops?

...

Me: Resego, we have been here for so many days and it's all your fault.

Resego: How is it my fault?

Me: You allowed Thuso to tell you what to do but you are older than him.

Resego: His plans were awesome.

Me: You should've come here with the cops, Kaden is very smart.

Thuso: That's the mistake we made.

Me: And it's not the only mistake you made.

Thuso: What do you mean?

Me: I am older than you and Resego and it's my responsibility to take care of you but now you had to "cross" my crazy husband and end up here with me. Believe me when I say that Kaden is dangerous. You shouldn't have tried to help me.

Naledi: What do you mean, friend? They are your siblings and they care about you.

Resego: She's failing to see that.

Thuso: She really is.

Me: I'm not failing to see that you care about me but I am just trying to look out for you. I will never be able to forgive myself if anything happens to you.

Resego: We know.

Me: Kaden sent a message to our father using Thuso's phone before switching it off. He told our father that we all went to Cape Town. Now we are stuck here.

Naledi: Are you giving up, friend?

...

I kept quiet.

God, you know how much I want to get out of this place and expose Kaden but the truth is I don't know who will help me. Nobody knows that we are here. It's really bad.

...

Naledi: Why are you quiet? Say something.

Me: I am scared.

Naledi: Why are you scared? We are here for you.

...

How do I tell all of you that I have been counting days and that I am well aware of the fact that a week passed by? Kaden told me that something will happen to me after a week of our marriage and I can't help but think that he's planning to sleep with me without my consent. I am very scared because Kaden does not deserve me. He's an animal.

...

Thuso: Reba, why are you scared?

Resego: I am also waiting for the answer.

Me: It's nothing serious.

Naledi: Why won't you tell us what's going on?

Me: It's nothing. Kaden told me that he will be tough on me from this week.

Naledi: How?

Thuso: Yeah, how?

...

Kaden walked in.

...

Kaden: (Smiles) Hey, family.

Me: Why are you here?

Kaden: This is my house. What kind of a question is that?

Thuso: You mean your father's house? You don't own a thing.

Kaden: (Smiles) My guy, my guy, my guy. Uhm... Thuso, I really like you and I know that you will be exactly like me one day.

Me: Over my dead body. My brother will never be like you.

...

He smiled and came closer to me.

...

Me: Get back.

Kaden: You are so beautiful, my wife. Bianca was right.

...

I kept quiet.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Resego: Kaden, get away from my sister.

Kaden: (Smiles) Should I get away from her and come closer to you?

...

Resego stood right in front of Kaden.

...

Resego: I am warning you, Kaden.

Kaden: Resego, why don't you just tell your sister that you want me? You think that I'm hot, right?

...

Resego spat on Kaden's face.

I trust Resego to get me in trouble. What have she done?

She attempted to run to the door but stopped when she saw how Kaden slapped me.

...

Kaden: Run away, Resego. Let's see how far you will go. The door is wide open. Run.

...

Resego started crying.

...

Resego: Kaden, why are you doing this? Let us go. We won't tell anyone about this.

Kaden: I told you to go, didn't I?

...

He slapped me again and this time I hit the floor.

...

Naledi: Kaden, please stop what you are doing. This is not the real you.

...

Kaden looked at Naledi and went closer to her. He tore Naledi's shirt and wiped the saliva on his face with it.

...

Me: Kaden, let her go.

Kaden: Do you know me, Naledi?

Naledi: Kaden, all I'm saying is that you are a good person. You just need help.

...

He gave Naledi the hottest slap of her life and immediately Naledi was on the floor. Me, Resego and Thuso "fought" with

Kaden. We attacked him but he gave us a beating of our lives and dragged me out of the room, leaving the others behind. He didn't leave the door wide open, he locked it. I was screaming in agony but nobody came to my rescue. Kaden dragged me on the stairs and he didn't care that he was hurting me.

...

Me: (Cries) Kaden, please stop.

Kaden: Just shut up. You dare hit me? Are you mad?

Me: I am sorry but please carry me. You are hurting me.

...

He stopped dragging me and smiled.

...

Kaden: Do you want to be in my arms?

Me: Yes, please.

Kaden: You should've said that a long time ago. Now look at how you are hurt.

...

I didn't say anything to him.

...

Kaden: Apologize or do you want me to teach you how to apologize?

Me: No, no, I will apologize.

Kaden: Okay honey, I am listening.

Me: I am very sorry.

Kaden: For what?

Me: For attacking you with my siblings and for disrespecting you.

Kaden: And for not protecting me as your husband.

Me: Yes, yes and for not protecting you as my husband.

Kaden: (Smiles) You are still beautiful. Come here.

...

He carried me to our room. He put me on bed and took care of my bruises.

God, where is everyone when all this bad things are happening to me? What have I done to deserve this? God, please don't forsake me.

...

Kaden: I will always take care of you no matter what.

Me: (Fake Smile) I believe you.

Kaden: I can't wait for you to meet my twin brother. I am handsome but Jaden is more handsome.

Me: I don't care about Jaden, you are more handsome to me.

Kaden: (Smiles) You are so nice to me.

Me: I have to be nice to you. You are my husband.

Kaden: You are so right, honey.

Me: When is your brother coming?

Kaden: I don't know but I think he'll be here in few days, definitely not today.

Me: Okay.

...

He kissed me. I kissed him back because I didn't want him to get angry again. He slowly undressed me. Tears were rolling down my face like a waterfall.

...

Me: Kaden, please stop it.

Kaden: Do you want to get me angry again after I have forgiven you?

Me: No.

Kaden: Then keep quiet.

...

He did what he wanted to do to me. He was gentle but I couldn't even enjoy myself because I didn't want to go there with him.

God, truly you have forsaken me. Kaden won. Why am I always losing? What have I done to deserve this treatment?

Kaden started going faster and faster until he got satisfied. I was his toy for almost one hour, thirty minutes. He did anything he wanted to do to me. He RAPED me!!!

To be continued...

22

[JOHANNESBURG]

[JADEN]

I arrived at OR Tambo Airport with Mackenzie and we met a lady by the name Bridget and she told us that she's Reba's mother and that Reba is in trouble.

Weird, right? I mean this lady just came straight to us. She looked like someone who was just waiting for us. That means that she knows us very well. But how does she know us?

...

Me: Uhm... Aunt, I don't understand a thing you just told us.

Mackenzie: Me too. How do you know us?

Bridget: Mackenzie and Jaden, please believe me. My daughter is...

Me: Hold on, how do you know our names?

Mackenzie: Exactly what I was about to ask.

Bridget: I am Reba's mother, obviously I know your names. Aren't you her friends?

Me: Yes, we are her friends.

Mackenzie: Are we even talking about the same Reba?

Bridget: Yes, we are.

Me: Show us some proof.

Bridget: Okay.

...

She showed us some proof.

...

Mackenzie: What if you faked all the documents and the photos?

Bridget: For what, baby?

Mackenzie: I don't know. Maybe you want something from us.

Bridget: I don't want anything but I need your help.

...

Should I believe this woman? Reba does not like talking about her parents so why would she talk about us to her parents?

...

Bridget: My daughter is in trouble. I can feel it.

Me: Where's her husband?

Bridget: I... I made... (Cries) I made a terrible mistake.

Mackenzie: Aunt, please don't cry. This is a public place. Let's go to the nearest restaurant.

Bridget: We are running out of time.

Me: Okay, let's go to the car. Our car is that side.

...

I pointed to the other side.

...

Bridget: Okay, let's go.

...

God, what is going on? Is this woman playing games or is she serious?

I gave her my handkerchief to wipe away her tears and we went to the car.

...

Me: Aunt, are you okay now?

Bridget: I will never be okay until my daughter is found.

Me: Is she missing?

Bridget: Your twin brother kidnapped her. You have to believe me. I know that you love Reba and I need you to save her life.

Me: What? What did you just say? What's going on here?

Bridget: Your twin brother kidnapped my daughter.

...

Kaden? Wait, who is my twin brother? Am I dreaming?

...

Me: My twin brother?

Bridget: Yes. Don't you have a twin brother?

Me: It depends on who's asking.

Bridget: I already know your twin brother so you don't have to play this game with me. Kaden Jones is your twin brother and he's also Reba's husband. He kidnapped her and I know that you love Reba. Believe me when I say that Reba is also in love with you. My husband is Thapelo Mogale and he's your father's best friend. Mavis, your mother is my best friend. Your friend is Damien and his parents' house burnt down to ashes because of your father. Your father asked Kaden to find people who can get the job done. The house was destroyed in order for Kaden to get married to Reba without your disturbance. You went to Cape Town with Damien because you are a true friend and Mackenzie went to Cape Town to take care of the family business. Everything was planned and my husband was part of it. I was shocked when Kaden told the truth in front of everyone

and even said that he would kill you. I didn't know that my husband was part of all this wickedness until I asked him. He's very evil. I can never burn down someone's house or try to harm him/her. I don't support what my husband and your father did. Resego told everyone that you love Reba so much and immediately changed her story because she saw how angry Kaden and Thapelo were. I know my children and they always think that I am the bad person, but I am not that bad. I am just scared of my husband. What Resego said was the truth and I was over the moon but obviously I had to act shocked and upset. I did my own investigations without talking to my husband or involving him but I am aware of the truth now. You once hit Reba with your car and took her to the hospital. You signed the hospital papers as Reba's husband. Isn't that true love? Well, Resego and my son, Thuso are also missing. Kaden wants us to believe that they went to Cape Town with Reba and Naledi, he sent a message using Thuso's phone but guess what? My private investigator told me that my children never left Johannesburg. Do you understand me now? Don't mention my name to anyone but find my children as soon as possible. Reba was forced to be Kaden's wife, she is supposed to be your wife. Fight for your love.

Me: But...

Bridget: I also know about your tattoo. It's beautiful. I saw its sample at the tattoo parlor. Have a good day.

...

She got out of the car and left.

...

Mackenzie: I am speechless.

Me: I am defeated.

Mackenzie: That's a lot to take in,

Me: I know. I feel like I am dreaming.

Mackenzie: Me too, Jay.

Me: Kaden and Reba? How?

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Mackenzie: I love you and I love Kaden but you have to do the right thing.

Me: As weak as I am? What am I going to tell Damien about his parents' house?

Mackenzie: The truth. You are not forced to save those who are evil.

Me: I know but he's going to be heartbroken.

Mackenzie: I know but I know that you will always be there for him. You are a good person and I need you to fight for your love.

Me: What love?

Mackenzie: Jaden Jones, you love Reba and you are also in love with her. Stop being in denial. I also know about the tattoo.

Me: What tattoo?

Mackenzie: You got her name tattooed on your chest.

...

I kept quiet and drove straight to my parents' house.

I am going to kill my twin brother today. I pray that nothing bad happened to Reba by now and that she's not harmed or else I will be a very heartless person.

...

[THAPELO]

My wife just walked in the room and she looks very scared. What have she done this time?

...

Me: What's wrong?

Bridget: Uhm... I...

Me: What have you done, Bridget?

Bridget: Uhm... Honey... It's nothing.

Me: But you look scared.

Bridget: I... Well... I killed...

Me: Who did you kill?

Bridget: Someone's dog and I feel so bad. I hit it with the car.

Me: Is that why you look scared?

Bridget: Yeah, you know that I love pets. I am sad that I killed...

Me: It's okay. It was an accident. Don't let it get to you.

...

She sat down.

...

Bridget: Honey?

Me: Yes?

Bridget: Why did all of you make a decision for Jaden even before talking to him?

Me: What decision?

Bridget: What if he was going to agree to marry our Reba?

Me: His father knows him very well. He told us that he was not going to agree.

Bridget: Honey, have you met Jaden?

Me: No.

Bridget: That's the mistake you made. You should've asked Denis...

Me: Where's this going?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Have you been crying?

Bridget: No.

Me: Your eyes are red.

Bridget: Dust got in my eyes.

Me: Are you telling the truth?

Bridget: (Cries) I failed my children all because of you. I am a mother but you turned my heart into a stone. You have destroyed our family.

Me: What have I done to deserve such disrespect?

...

She got up and looked away but she couldn't stop crying.

...

Me: Bridget?

Bridget: Everything is your fault. You love money more than your family. There's nothing you wouldn't do for money.

...

I got up and stood before her.

...

Me: What did you say?

Bridget: Thapelo, you heard me. You can hit me, it's fine. You have been hitting me for years. I am still alive and strong because of my children.

Me: (Laughs) Which children? They hate you even more than the way they hate me. They hate you more because you are a mother and you are never siding with them.

Bridget: It's your fault.

Me: Money means the world to me. I can't be poor. You are right, I'd do anything for money even if it means forcing my daughter to be Kaden's wife.

Bridget: You are a horrible man.

Me: You can call me all sorts of names in our bedroom but make sure that you support me in front of everyone. I am in a good mood today and I won't hurt you. I'll see you later.

Bridget: Are you going to a stripping club again?

Me: Why not? You failed to make me happy.

...

I walked out of the room.

To be continued...

23

[NALEDI]

Rebaone was just brought back to the attic and she looks like someone who took a bath before coming here but she also looks very sad and broken. What happened?

...

Me: Reba, what's wrong?

Rebaone: Oh my God, you are awake. I was worried sick about you. Are you okay?

Me: Yeah, I am fine. Your husband is really strong. He gave me a hot...

Rebaone: He's not my husband.

Me: Sorry.

Thuso: Reba, are you okay?

Rebaone: How can I be okay? Look at where we are.

Thuso: Jaden will come to the rescue. I trust him.

Rebaone: (Laughs) You don't even know Jaden. He doesn't care about me.

Resego: Don't be ridiculous. He cares about you.

Thuso: And he loves you.

Me: Resego and Thuso are absolutely right. Jaden loves you.

Rebaone: You don't have to make me feel better by lying to me.

Me: But...

Rebaone: But nothing. I need to talk to you. Please follow me to the corner.

Resego: And what about us?

Rebaone: Stay right here. I just want to talk to Naledi in private.

Resego: Should I be worried?

Rebaone: No.

Resego: Okay, we'll be right here.

Rebaone: Sure.

...

Reba and I went to the corner of the attic.

...

Me: What's going on? What do you want to talk about?

Rebaone: Kaden.

Me: I am listening.

...

Reba kept quiet.

God, something is definitely wrong. My friend looks shattered.

...

Me: Reba?

Rebaone: Uhm... I... He raped me.

Me: Oh my God, no wonder you look like a walking corpse.

Rebaone: I cried but he didn't stop.

Me: I am so so so so so so sorry. I failed to protect you.

Rebaone: No Nal, this is not your fault. This is my parents' fault.

I hate them so much especially my mother.

Me: Why do you hate your mother more than your father?

Rebaone: Isn't it obvious?

Me: Is it because you believe that she is the one who was supposed to protect you from the onset?

...

Tears fell off her eyes as she nodded.

...

Me: I know what you have been through. Tell me, where are Kaden's parents?

Rebaone: I have no idea.

Me: Are they not around?

Rebaone: Clearly not.

Me: Who is going to help us?

Rebaone: No one. You, Thuso and Resego will have to help yourselves. I am as good as dead.

Me: No Reba, it's not the end of the world. You won't get pregnant because you are preventing.

Rebaone: This is not only about pregnancy, it's also about diseases. I don't trust Kaden at all.

Me: Let's try to be positive, honey. I need you. I am nothing without you.

Rebaone: You have a loving family, how can you say that you are nothing without me?

Me: I have never had a friend like you. If you do anything stupid I will also do something stupid.

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Promise me that you won't do anything stupid?

Rebaone: Like what?

Me: Committing suicide.

...

She wiped away her tears and laughed.

...

Me: What's funny?

Rebaone: You are.

Me: How?

Rebaone: Honey, I will always fight to stay alive no matter what. I am not that weak. I will never commit suicide, trust me.

Me: (Smiles) Really?

Rebaone: Yes, you don't have to worry about me. I will never commit suicide, You, Resego and Thuso would die. I am living for all of you.

Me: And Jaden?

Rebaone: What about him?

Me: Are you not in love with him?

Rebaone: I am not in love with Jaden. We are just friends.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

I laughed and looked away.

Does she want me to tell her what I already know or will she just confess?

...

Rebaone: Why are you laughing?

Me: Please confess, don't we tell one another everything?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Fine. Let me tell you what I already know.

Rebaone: Yeah?

Me: You got Jaden's name tattooed on your wrist, that's why you are always wearing different wrist bands. I have known you for so long. You never liked wearing wrist bands but you got yourself different wrist bands ever since you got married. Why? Because you are hiding Jaden's name with wrist bands. You change them everyday like they are your clothes.

Rebaone: I... Uhh... How did you see the tattoo? It's always hidden.

Me: I saw the picture you took, that was the day you got the tattoo. Don't forget that I have always known your phone password.

Rebaone: But my face wasn't showing. The wrist could belong to anyone.

Me: I am not stupid.

Rebaone: Yes, I got Jaden's name tattooed on my wrist but I am not in love with him.

Me: So why did you get his name tattooed on your wrist if you are not in love with him?

Rebaone: Because I was stupid and I was not thinking straight. I guess the sex was good.

Me: (Laughs) Yeah, right.

Rebaone: I got the tattoo the day before I got married.

Me: Really? That's a long time ago. I thought that you got the tattoo after the wedding.

Rebaone: No. I started wearing wrist bands before the wedding and I was wearing a very beautiful wrist band on my wedding day.

Me: Oh my God, I didn't pay attention.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Yeah, I know:

Me: Do you think that Jaden would ever get your name tattooed on any part of his body?

Rebaone: I... Uhh... No.

Me: He will surprise you.

...

[DENIS]

I was at work when I got a call from Jaden, telling me that he wants a family meeting as soon as possible. He also told me that he came back to Johannesburg sooner than expected. I had to rush home. My wife was not around but I also asked her to come home.

I was mad at Kaden few days ago but now I am fine because he proved to me that he didn't do anything to Reba.

I am worried about the meeting called by Jaden. Does he know something about us? Did he find out that I was the one who sent people to burn down Damien's parents' house? Why is he here with the cops? What's going on?

...

Me: Son, it's nice to see you.

Jaden: Please keep quiet. I am not here to have fun with you.

Mavis: Jaden, is that how you speak to your father?

Jaden: Mavis, keep quiet.

Kaden: Jaden, are you crazy? What's going on with you?

...

Jaden looked at the cops and nodded. The cops immediately started searching our house.

What the hell is going on?

...

Mavis: Jaden honey, what's going on? What are they searching for?

Kaden: Jaden, this is disrespectful.

...

Jaden punched Kaden so hard and Kaden started bleeding. This has never happened before. Jaden? Fighting? What happened to him? He is known as the Jesus Christ of the house.

...

Kaden: Jaden Jones, you just punched me.

Mackenzie: And he should punch you again.

Kaden: Mackenzie? Are you supporting him? What have I done?

Mackenzie: You are a horrible person.

...

Kaden attempted to slap Mackenzie but Jaden caught his hand and beat the living hell out of him. I tried to separate the two brothers from fighting but Jaden's strength shocked me. He pushed me away and continued to fight with Kaden.

God, I didn't even know that Jaden can fight. What happened to him? Why is he this angry?

...

Mavis: (Shouts) JADEN, YOU WILL KILL YOUR BROTHER. LET HIM GO!!!!

Jaden: (Yells) YOU ARE ALL HORRIBLE BUT YOU WON'T GET AWAY WITH THIS!!!!

...

He left Kaden lying on the floor, bleeding like never before. He headed upstairs.

...

Me: Mackenzie, what's going?

Mackenzie: Don't underestimate the power of a man who is in love. Jaden does not like fighting but you all provoked him. You will rot in jail. The cops are everywhere and they are also surrounding the house.

Me: But what have we done?

Mackenzie: Every dog has its day.

...

She also headed upstairs. I begged the cops to help me with Kaden but they all refused.

I didn't know that Jaden is capable of this. He turned the cops against everyone. Kaden is losing blood, the cops are refusing to help me and they are also not allowing me to take him to the hospital. What is going on here? And what was Mackenzie talking about? Who is Jaden in love with? Oh No, could it be that Jaden is in love with Damien? Is he gay? Wow, this is about Damien's parents' house.

...

Me: Mavis, is your son gay?

Mavis: That's what I am also thinking. He knows the truth and he's angry because we hurt the love of his life, Damien. That's what Mackenzie was trying to say, right?

Me: Yes, you are definitely right. Jaden Jones is gay. How disgusting is this? My son is gay

To be continued...

24

[REBAONE]

A movie? A movie is my life. It only happens in the movies to be rescued in this way, right? Jaden Jones? Here? Now? How? For me? Wow, this is surreal. We didn't even hear the door open.

...

Me: Jaden? Here?

...

Thuso, Naledi and Resego also looked at the door.

...

Resego: Is this a dream?

Thuso: No, it's not. Jaden is really here.

Naledi: So soon?

Thuso: Yes, he is here for his love.

Me: Thuso, keep quiet. What do you know about love?

...

Thuso smiled and winked at me. With tears in his eyes, Jaden came closer to me and looked at my bruises.

...

Jaden: Did he do this to you?

Me: Who?

Jaden: My brother?

...

Wow, Jaden knows the truth. God, I hope that I am not dreaming.

...

Me: Jay? Mr Killer? Jaden? Are you really here?

Thuso: Yes, he's really here. Why are you finding it difficult to believe? I told you that he will come.

Me: Thuso, are you a fortune teller?

Thuso: (Smiles) You can say that.

...

I looked at Jaden and just cried but being a real man, he hugged me.

...

Me: Thank you so much.

Jaden: I am so sorry. This is all my fault.

...

The cops came in and took Thuso, Resego and Naledi away.
Jaden wiped away my tears and kissed my forehead.

...

Jaden: Everything is fine. They will rot in jail.

Me: Who are you talking about?

Jaden: My parents and twin brother.

Me: Where are the men who were guarding this room?

Jaden: They got arrested.

...

I looked into his eyes and smiled.

...

Me: Why are you crying?

Jaden: I am not crying.

Me: You have tears in your eyes.

Jaden: There's a difference between teary eyes and crying.

Me: (Smiles) Mhmm, okay,

Jaden: Are you not mad at me?

Me: For what? You did nothing wrong but you saved us. I should be thankful.

...

He took off his shirt and gave it to me.

...

Jaden: This room is cold but you can wear my shirt. It's big for you so it's going to keep you warm.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

My eyes landed straight on his chest and I was shocked to see a tattoo of my name. I placed my hand on his chest and looked into his eyes.

...

Jaden: Uhm... I... Well...

Me: Jaden, are you in love with me?

Jaden: Huh?

Me: You heard me.

Jaden: Well... I... You see... I...

Me: Just answer me. I am curious. Are you in...

...

A cop walked in.

...

Cop: Mr Jones, we need to get going. The victims should give their statement today.

Jaden: Okay, let's go.

...

I was about to walk on my own when Jaden carried me out of the house.

God, one brother brought pain into my life and the other brother got rid of it. Is this my destiny? Is this what you wanted? Is this a sign of love? Are you "in other words" telling me that Jaden Jones is the man for me? Look at how gently he's carrying me. It's amazing and he's making me fall in love with him. Am I even ready to fall in love?

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[BRIDGET]

I heard that The Jones were arrested during the day and I am going to act like I don't know anything. Mavis is a true friend and I know that she loves Reba but right now my hands are tied. I can't do anything to help her. Thapelo just came home and he's not talking to me. Why should I be the one to talk to him?

Thuso and Resego walked in and they were not in good condition.

...

Me: (Smiles) My children? Oh my God, I am so happy to see you.

...

I attempted to hug them but they pushed me away and walked over to their father.

...

Resego: Thapelo Mogale.

Thapelo: Hey baby, how was Cape Town?

Resego: We never went to Cape Town. We were kidnapped.

...

I have to act shocked.

...

Me: WHAT??? KIDNAPPED??? HOW??? WHERE???

Thuso: Mom

Advertisement

we told you that Kaden is evil.

Me: What are you trying to say?

Thuso: Kaden kidnapped us.

Thapelo: Must you always say bad things about Kaden?

Resego: We are telling it like it is. Kaden kidnapped us and Jaden saved us.

Me: Jaden? Which Jaden?

Resego: Jaden Jones.

...

Thapelo laughed and looked at me.

...

Thapelo: Listen to the children you gave birth to. They want me to be broke. They are ruining their sister's happiness.

Resego: (Laughs) Happiness? What happiness? Reba was never happy.

...

God, please bless Jaden and keep him safe from harm.

...

Me: Resego, what happened to you? Did Kaden hurt you?

Resego: Yes, he beat us including Reba. He also raped her.

Me: (Cries) Rape? Are you serious?

Resego: Yes, I am serious.

Thapelo: Bridget, don't tell me that you believe this girl. She's a liar.

Resego: Would I lie about rape?

Thapelo: You lie about everything.

Thuso: Resego, who told you about rape?

Resego: I heard Reba telling Jaden outside the police station.

Thuso: Really?

Resego: Yes, she also told the cops. Kaden will never be free.

Me: Amen to that. He must rot in jail. Right, honey?

...

I looked at Thapelo and he didn't look like someone who was on the same page with me.

...

Thapelo: Bridget, you never cease to amaze me. Kaden is Reba's husband, he didn't rape her. He took what belongs to him.

Me, Resego & Thuso: WHAT???

Thapelo: Why are you all shocked? Are you all foolish?

Resego: Are you not the foolish one? I just told you that your daughter was raped and you are speaking rubbish. What kind of a father are you?

Thapelo: Sego my dear, insulting me won't change the fact that Kaden is innocent.

Thuso: Dad, you are...

Thapelo: Thuso, you are a child. Stay out of this.

Resego: You were ready to kill Kaden when I told you that he kidnapped Reba and now that I am talking about rape, you are telling us that Kaden is innocent? Thapelo, are you hearing yourself?

Me: Yes dear, are you hearing yourself? This is rape not just kidnapping. Kaden will never be free, he will rot in jail and you should...

Thapelo: Don't count your chickens before they hatch.

Me: What's that supposed to mean? What are you going to do?

Thapelo: The right thing. Come with me.

Me: No, I am not going anywhere with you. I want to be with my children and I want to see Reba right now.

...

He gave me a serious look. His look was written "I will kill you".

...

Me: Uhm... I... Okay. Let's go, honey.

Resego: Bridget, I am not surprised. You don't care about us. Reba is in the hospital right now and she needs you.

Me: I... Uhm... My husband is right. Kaden is innocent. He's Reba's husband and he... (Cries) He must sleep with her anytime he wants.

...

I walked out and Thapelo followed me.

God, what have I done to deserve such a husband? He's a monster and I will always look bad in front of my children. They hate me.

...

[RESEGO]

Me: Thuso, your mother is very evil.

Thuso: I noticed something.

Me: What did you notice?

Thuso: Mom is scared of dad. She wanted to be with us and go to the hospital with us but dad gave her a very frightening look and she immediately changed what she was saying.

Me: Really?

Thuso: Yes, I looked at her and also looked at dad.

...

I kept quiet.

Could Bridget be scared of Thapelo or is Thuso seeing things?

...

Thuso: Say something.

Me: I... Like what? I didn't see what you saw.

Thuso: Well, did you ask yourself why mom said "I... Uhm... My husband is right. Kaden is innocent. He's Reba's husband and he..." She then paused, started crying and continued by saying "He must sleep with her anytime he wants". Be smart Segoo, our mother did not mean what she said. She doesn't believe that Kaden is innocent and she wants him to rot in jail just like us.

...

I kept quiet.

This boy might be right or Bridget might have been acting so that we can believe that she is changing. God, what's going on?

...

Thuso: Segoo?

Me: Uhh... Yeah, you might be right but I am so confused.

Thuso: How about we keep an eye on her?

Me: Fine by me.

Thuso: Something really tells me that she's scared of our father.

Me: Well, we shall see. We will find out on our own.

Thuso: Awesome. Let's go pack our bags. I can't wait to live with Jaden, Damien and Mackenzie.

Me: You talk as if you really know them. I know them and you don't.

Thuso: (Smiles) Well, I feel like I know them but I can't say the same thing about Damien because I haven't met him. How is Damien like?

Me: Thuso, I don't want to be here any longer. I will tell you about Damien later. Let's go pack. Mackenzie supported her brother, Jaden and moved out of The Jones Mansion, we should also support our sister, Reba and move out of this house as soon as possible.

Thuso: (Smiles) Awesome. Good days are yet to come.

To be continued...

25

[REBAONE]

Visiting hours are over, how is it that Thuso and Resego are here? And mom is not here, I am not surprised.

...

Me: Hey, I didn't know that they would let you in.

Resego: (Smiles) We are smart.

Me: How are you? Did your bruises get taken care of?

Resego: Yeah. We are fine.

Me: Are you fine, Thuso?

Thuso: (Smiles) Yes, I am fine. How are you?

Me: I am alive, I thank God.

Thuso: And Jaden.

Me: (Smiles) Of course.

Resego: Where is he?

Me: Jaden?

Resego: Yeah.

Me: He's running away from me.

Resego: Why?

Me: Because he doesn't want to answer my question.

Thuso: What question?

Me: (Smiles) Let it go, honey. Where's mom?

Resego: Bridget? Uhh... We don't know.

Me: What do you mean?

Thuso: We didn't find her at home so we couldn't tell her about you.

...

Are they lying to me? Well, they don't have to. I know that our mother failed us a long time ago.

...

Me: Thuso, you don't have to cover up for our mother. I know that she doesn't care.

Resego: Thuso is not covering up for anyone. You know that I don't like Bridget, would I allow Thuso to cover up for her in my presence?

Me: (Smiles) Of course not. I am sorry.

Resego: No, it's okay.

Me: I tried to call her but I couldn't get through.

Resego: But you don't have a phone.

Me: The hospital's phone is working perfectly.

Resego: Don't worry, she will know the truth very soon.

Me: And dad?

Thuso: You don't have to ask about them. They will know the truth very soon. Forget about them for now.

Me: Where is Kaden?

Resego: Uhm... The hospital.

Me: WHAT? Was he not arrested?

Resego: His ribs are fractured so the police brought him to the hospital but they are guarding him.

Thuso: He's going to prison once he gets better.

Resego: Yeah.

Me: Oh, that's okay.

Resego: Jaden is a real man. He showed Kaden his place.

...

But is it okay for brothers to be fighting? It's all my fault. I know that Jaden is a nice person and he doesn't like fighting but he almost killed his brother because of me. I feel so bad. Kaden broke my heart but I still don't wish death upon his life. It's just not in me.

...

Thuso: Reba, why are you quiet?

Resego: Don't tell us that you are in love with Kaden.

Me: Of course not. I will never fall in love with Kaden. It's highly impossible.

Resego: And Jaden?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Resego: Say something.

Me: I... Well... I really care about him.

Thuso: Don't you love him at all?

Me: I do but as a friend.

Resego: Are you still in love with Bongani?

Me: No, my love for him died.

Thuso: Reba, can I tell you something?

Me: Sure.

Thuso: You never loved Bongani. Love does not die especially if it's real and true. What you shared with Bongani was not love but "deep like". I am happy that he's out of your life.

...

Deep like? What the hell is deep like?

...

Resego: Thuso, what is "Deep like"?

Me: Yeah, tell us.

Thuso: It's when you really really really like someone and end up thinking that you love that person. Sometimes people mistaken deep like for love and end up in a relationship. Their relationship does not get far because there was never love but deep like.

...

Resego and I looked at one another and kept quiet.

Is this Thuso? Wow, he's really growing up and he knows how to reason with someone. This is really nice.

Resego laughed and looked at Thuso.

...

Thuso: What?

Resego: Are you sure that you don't have a girlfriend?

Thuso: Yeah, I am sure.

Me: So who's teaching you these things?

Resego: Exactly my point. Answer the question, Thuso. Who's teaching you these things?

Thuso: Observing.

Resego: Is that all?

Thuso: Yep.

Resego: Okay, Mr Observant. You are really smart. I love how you reason.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

[THE NEXT DAY]

[JADEN]

Thuso is really smart. I overheard his conversation with his sisters last night and I was impressed. But now I am confused, do I really love Reba or is this deep like?

Thuso walked in the kitchen.

...

Thuso: Good morning.

Me: Morning, how are you?

Thuso: (Smiles) I am good thanks and how are you?

Me: I'm fine, thank you. Did you sleep well?

Thuso: Yeah I did. Your house is lovely.

Me: Well, it's not only my house. It also belongs to Damien.

Thuso: When is he coming back?

Me: Uhm... I don't know.

Thuso: Did you tell him the truth?

Me: No, I don't want to stress him but I will tell him everything when he's here.

Thuso: I understand.

Me: Who's going with me to the hospital?

Thuso: Are you going to see Reba or Kaden?

Me: I am going to get Reba.

Thuso: Uhm... Wow, are they discharging her today?

Me: (Smiles) Yeah, they are.

Thuso: (Smiles) That's great.

Me: There's only four bedrooms in this house and two bedrooms are already taken by me and Damien. Do you think that your sisters will mind sharing one bedroom with my sister?

Thuso: No they won't. Mackenzie and Resego already shared a room last night.

Me: Oh, I see. That's lovely but three people can not share a bed. Your sister is coming today.

Thuso: Do you mind sharing your bedroom?

Me: No, why are you asking?

Thuso: You'll share with my sister or with me. It's up to Reba.

Me: Not up to me?

Thuso: Yeah, it's not up to you.

...

He smiled at me and began to walk away.

...

Me: Please wait.

...

He stopped walking and looked at me.

...

Thuso: Yeah?

Me: Do you think that I am in love with Reba?

Thuso: (Laughs) Why are you asking me? You should ask yourself that question.

Me: Well, I am confused. How do I differentiate between real love and deep like?

Thuso: Deep like? Do you also know about it or were you eavesdropping?

Me: Uhm... Sorry. I was eavesdropping.

Thuso: (Smiles) It's okay. You are forgiven. Well, let me ask you something.

Me: Yeah, I am listening.

Thuso: How do you feel about Reba after knowing that your brother raped her?

Me: I feel the same way I felt about her before knowing the truth.

Thuso: Are you sure that nothing changed?

Me: Yeah, I am sure.

Thuso: You have your answer. Love does not die especially if it's real and true. That's your answer.

Me: (Smiles) So this is not deep like, right?

Thuso: Talk to your heart and find out. I'll be right back.

...

He walked out of the kitchen.

I really like this boy. He's really smart. I know that this is weird and maybe foolish but the truth is I am learning a lot from him.

...

[REBAONE]

Wow, mom is here. I am really surprised. I thought that she wouldn't come to see me.

...

Me: Hey.

Bridget: (Smiles) Hey honey, how are you?

Me: I'm getting there, thanks for asking. Where's dad?

Bridget: Uhm... He's busy.

Me: It's okay, I understand. You look sad, what's wrong?

Bridget: Something like this never happened before that's why I always looked happy to you.

Me: Something like what?

Bridget: My daughter's kidnapping, rape and getting beaten up. I am so sorry. I failed you.

Me: Do you mean your apology?

Bridget: Yes, I do. I am a woman. I know exactly how you feel.

Me: Mom, I don't love Kaden and I will never be able to love him.

Bridget: What can I do? My hands are tied.

Me: Why are you acting so strange? What's going on?

Bridget: (Cries) He's not listening to me. He's trying his best to get them out of jail.

Me: Dad?

Bridget: Yes.

Me: Why does he hate me so much?

Bridget: He doesn't hate you, believe me. He...

Me: This is your fault. You allowed him to treat me this way. You are always supporting him even when he's wrong. You are not a good mother. Everything is your fault and I don't think that I'll ever forgive you. You became a mother by mistake.

...

She stormed out of my ward.

I am surprised. Why didn't she slap me this time? Is she no longer good at slapping her children? I hate her so much and I will not rest until I've taught her a lesson. Does she even know what I'm going through? I hate her. A real mother is supposed to protect her children but my own mother gave me to the lion. She allowed the lion to eat me. How can I forgive such a woman?

To be continued...

26

[THE HOSPITAL PREMISES]

[JADEN]

Me: Thuso, is that your mom?

...

I pointed at some woman who was walking to another direction.

...

Thuso: Uhm... Yeah, I think so.

Me: Please get her to come to the car.

Thuso: Okay.

...

Thuso got out of the car and ran after his mother. Thank God he got to her before she got in her car.

Why is she crying? Ohhh, Reba!!!

They got in my car.

...

Me: Hi, aunt.

Bridget: Hey, son. How are you?

Me: I am fine but you don't look okay. What's wrong?

...

She looked at Thuso and kept quiet.

...

Me: Thuso, please excuse us.

Thuso: Okay, I am going to see Reba.

Me: No problem.

...

He got out of the car and walked inside the hospital. I looked at Ms Bridget.

...

Me: You have a sad story to tell, what's going on?

Bridget: What are you talking about?

Me: What is your husband doing to you?

Bridget: I don't understand.

Me: Is he abusing you?

...

She wiped away her tears.

...

Bridget: My husband is a good man, don't ever ask me that question again.

Me: Why are you defending him? Are the two of you stupid?

Bridget: Two of us? What are you trying to say?

Me: I'm talking about you and my mom, Mavis. She's exactly like you. I know that she's a good woman but her husband is controlling her. She's always supporting her husband even when her husband is wrong. You are friends and both foolish.

Bridget: Did you call me to your car so that you can insult me?

Me: Aunt, I know that I am a good person but I am not perfect. I am not insulting you, I am just telling you the truth. I have eyes, I can see what's happening.

Bridget: Your eyes are deceiving you.

Me: You are a mother that's why you are crying right now. You came here for Reba, right?

Bridget: No, I came here for Kaden.

Me: (Laughs) Really? Why would you come here for him? Are you not the one who begged me to save your daughter?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: You will lose your children forever if you don't stop what you are doing.

Bridget: Jaden, I need to go.

...

She got out of the car and walked away.

...

[THAPELO]

Is that my wife? And whose car is that? I hope that she's not cheating on me. I will not be taken for a fool.

...

[REBAONE]

Me: Thuso, are you serious?

Thuso: Yeah, it looks like he knows her. I am only getting it now.

Me: Jaden knows our mother? Wow, I am shocked.

Thuso: I didn't think about it until now. How does he know her?

Me: I don't know. Well, I am ready to go. Who's signing the papers?

Thuso: Uhm... Jaden, I guess.

Me: Okay.

...

Dad walked in.

...

Thuso: Dad, hi.

Me: Hey, Dad. It's nice to see you.

...

He smiled and sat down.

...

Me: Is everything okay?

Thapelo: How are you?

Me: I am okay, I thank God and Jaden.

Thapelo: Child, what's going on between you and Jaden?

Me: Nothing, why are you asking?

Thapelo: Couldn't you stay away from your husband's brother?

Thuso: Dad, it's not Reba's fault. She didn't...

Thapelo: Thuso, it looks like your sister is getting discharged.
Take her things to my car.

Thuso: Your car? For what?

Thapelo: What's the meaning of that?

Thuso: She's not going anywhere with you. She's going to Jaden's house whether you like it or not.

...

Thuso took my things and walked away. Dad was shocked by his behavior.

...

Thapelo: What have you done to that boy?

Me: Why am I always getting blamed for everything?

Thapelo: Are you not the eldest daughter in our family?

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Wow.

Thapelo: What happened to you, honey?

Me: What do you mean?

Thapelo: Jaden is your husband's brother. Why did you have to fall in love with him?

...

Am I in love with Jaden? Since when?

...

Me: I don't know what you are talking about.

Thapelo: Let me remind you.

Me: Sure, go ahead.

Thapelo: Jaden broke your virginity. Would you sleep with someone you don't love? I know you, you wouldn't.

...

I kept quiet.

Who told him that Jaden broke my virginity? Clearly and obviously it wasn't me.

...

Thapelo: Why are you quiet?

Me: Because you are making me feel uncomfortable. Jaden didn't break my virginity.

Thapelo: Did Kaden break it?

Me: Yes, he did. He raped me, remember?

Thapelo: I already talked to Kaden, I was here last night. He told me that you are not a virgin and the last time I checked you were a virgin.

Me: I don't remember saying anything about being a virgin to you. The last time I checked I was not a virgin. I broke my virginity in Matric.

Thapelo: (Laughs) Baby, I am laughing right now but this doesn't mean that you are funny. I am laughing because you are getting on my nerves.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Thapelo: You don't know how to lie. Your story is not adding up. Did you break your virginity in Grade 12 or did Kaden break your virginity the day he "raped" you?

Me: Uhhh... I... Well, both.

Thapelo: Let me tell you something. I got you married because I want more money. Denis and I are friends. We made a deal with this other old friend of ours. His name is Jackson. We want to get access to this other money and for that to happen we (Denis and I) had to get our children married and provide the marriage certificate to Jackson. We were just taking orders from Jackson. We didn't want to trouble our children but we had no other options. I want to have more money and I never want it to finish.

Me: And you had to choose the worst husband for me? Why didn't you choose Jaden? He's a very nice person.

Thapelo: Denis told me that Jaden would not agree. He's nothing like Kaden. He believes in love and he wouldn't marry someone he doesn't love.

Me: So it was best for you to choose somebody who doesn't believe in love for me? Isn't that wickedness?

Thapelo: You are nothing like Bianca. Kaden already loves you, I can tell. You know how to calm him down. You are slowly changing him.

Me: (Laughs) Wow, you never cease to amaze. Dad, why are you here?

Thapelo: I spoke to Jackson about everything that happened and he told me that you can't divorce Kaden.

Me: I can't? Why?

Thapelo: Well, if you divorce him it means that Denis and I will lose the money. It's a lot of money baby, think about it.

Me: You are selfish, Thapelo Mogale and believe me when I say that you are no longer my father. I will never refer to you as my father or my dad again. You and Bridget are dead to me.

Thapelo: You don't mean that, do you?

Me: I mean everything I said. You are dead to me and I won't help you with anything. Bye.

Thapelo: Please wait.

Me: What do you want?

Thapelo: I don't have a problem with Jaden but you can never be with him. You are married to Kaden not Jaden.

...

"Don't be too sure"; said Damien, walking through the door.

Wow, how excited I am to see him.

...

Me: Damien, when did you... Oh my God, I am so happy to see you.

...

I hugged him. He smiled at me.

...

Damien: I am also happy to see you.

Thapelo: Is this Jaden's friend, Damien?

Me: Yes.

Thapelo: Damien, what is it that I shouldn't be sure about?

Damien: You said that Reba can never be with Jaden because she's married to Kaden. Don't be too sure, sir.

Thapelo: What do you mean?

Damien: Rebaone is legally married to Jaden Jones and she's not legally married to Kaden Jones.

...

Huh? What is Damien saying now?

...

Thapelo: What did you say?

Damien: I believe that you heard me, sir. Jaden is your son in-law, not Kaden.

Thapelo: How?

Damien: Jaden married Reba before Kaden and he is still married to Reba. Reba and Kaden's marriage is just a joke. It's fake. People attended the wedding but it was just to fool them. Ask your daughter, she played you and she did a good job.

...

God, why is Damien lying? Does he want Thapelo to kill me?

...

Thapelo: I... I... Do you have any proof?

Damien: I do.

...

Damien gave Thapelo Mogale a file containing proof. I was also shocked.

Hold on, is this a dream? I am Jaden Jones' wife and the truth is right in front of me. Was I drunk when I got married? I really don't remember anything.

...

Thapelo: Reba, is this true?

Me: Huh?

Thapelo: You heard me. Is it true? Are you married to Jaden Jones?

...

God, I don't know what Damien is up to. I don't even know what's going on. I don't know when I got married and how but I trust Damien. I am really in the dark and I feel like I lost my memory but I have to say yes to Thapelo.

...

Thapelo: (Shouts) REBAONE, WHY ARE YOU QUIET? ARE YOU MARRIED TO JADEN JONES? YES OR NO???!

Me: Yes, I am. I am sorry, I didn't want to be married to the man you chose for me. Jaden Jones is my husband and I...

...

He slapped me and I literally saw flames. My head was on fire, that's how hot the slap was.

Wow, Damien. Well done, I just got a hot slap from Thapelo Mogale and clearly he wants to kill me right here, and right now.

To be continued...

27

[JADEN]

I just walked in Reba's ward and it looks like I walked into something very serious. What happened here? The tension is everywhere in the ward. Uhm... Damien? Here? Why? Or am I seeing things?

I cleared my throat and the elderly man looked at me.

...

Me: Uhm... Hello, sir.

...

He kept quiet and walked out of the ward.

Wow, he's really weird. Who is he?

...

Rebaone: Hey, Jay.

Me: Hey, what's going on?

...

Rebaone came closer to me. She had tears in her eyes.

...

Rebaone: Where have you been?

Me: Uhm... I am sorry but I was with your doctor. Did something happen?

...

She hugged me and just cried.

...

Me: Damien, did I do something wrong?

Damien: No.

Me: Why are you even here?

Damien: Me?

Me: Who else would I be talking to?

Damien: Uhh... Well, I live in Johannesburg just like you. That's why I'm here.

Me: You know what I'm talking about.

Damien: Give me a break and comfort your girl, I'll see you later.

...

Rebaone stood before Damien and wiped away her tears.

...

Damien: (Smiles) You are welcome.

Rebaone: I wasn't about to thank you.

Damien: Oh, why are you standing in front of me?

Rebaone: Be honest with me.

Damien: Okay, I am listening.

Rebaone: Did I lose my memory?

...

Damien laughed and looked at me.

...

Me: What?

Damien: Take good care of her. She has been through a lot and her father also slapped her.

Me: Her father? When?

Rebaone: The man who was here is my father.

Me: Oh my God, why didn't you tell me while he was still here?

Rebaone: I thought you know him like the way you know my mom.

Damien: Do you know her mom?

Rebaone: And how?

Me: It's a long story. I am tired. Let's go home.

Rebaone: Jay, please be honest with me. Did you marry me out of love or pity?

...

Marriage? What is she saying now? When did I marry her?

...

Damien: I... I should get going.

Rebaone: Why? You also saved the day, Damien.

Damien: And you haven't thanked me.

Rebaone: (Smiles) I was going to thank you in a nice way but you are rushing me so thank you.

...

What are these two talking about?

...

Me: I am still here, you know. What's going on?

Rebaone: Jaden, why are you always acting? Am I not your wife? Be free around me.

Me: My wife?

Rebaone: Yeah. I don't remember anything but I am happy. You will find me in the car, this room is depressing me.

...

She walked out. I looked at Damien.

...

Me: Damien, what is she saying?

Damien: Uhm... Well, just play along. You are her husband.

Me: Am I really her husband?

Damien: Yes.

...

He also walked out of the ward.

God, am I dreaming? When did I get married? I trust Damien, maybe I got married to Reba when I was drunk. It's all good, Kaden will never have her.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[MAVIS]

I may be trapped in this place but my heart is singing and dancing with so much joy. Jaden is in love with Reba. God finally saw what's in a mother's heart. Kaden is my son and I also love him but he doesn't deserve Reba. He's a bully and I am also scared of him. Jaden, may God bless you.

Bridget came to see me.

...

Me: How are you, Bridget?

Bridget: I am fine and how are you?

Me: I'm also okay. To be honest with you, I am very happy.

Bridget: (Smiles) Me too. Jaden and Rebaone are good together.

Me: Yeah, they are but I don't think that our husbands will ever allow them to be together.

...

Bridget laughed and winked at me.

...

Me: What's that about?

Bridget: They don't have a choice. Reba and Jaden are married. My husband told me everything. There's proof that Reba and Jaden are married and they have been married before Kaden married Reba.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: (Smiles) You are joking, right?

Bridget: No, I am very serious:

Me: This means that Reba and Kaden's marriage is fake, right?

...

She smiled and nodded.

...

Me: Wow, this is the best news I've ever heard in my entire life.

Bridget: I know. Listen, I know that Kaden is also your son but what he did to my daughter is not okay. He deserves Bianca, not my daughter.

Me: Kaden does not deserve any girl. He's abusive and controlling.

Bridget: Do you think that he's like his father?

Me: Yes. I still regret the day I married Denis. He appears to be the most loving man in front of people but he's always bad to me when we are alone.

Bridget: Thapelo is exactly the same. He doesn't even want to change.

Me: Thapelo and Denis are friends and they will never change. We are stuck with them forever.

Bridget: Does he still hit you?

Me: Denis?

Bridget: Yeah.

...

I nodded.

...

Bridget: Thapelo is also still hitting me and he's still going to strip clubs.

Me: Why are they failing to respect us and love us?

Bridget: They once loved us.

Me: When they were not rich.

Bridget: Yes, their love for money changed them.

...

Jaden walked in. I was shocked to see him.

Oh my God, I hope that he didn't hear anything.

...

Me: Honey, did they allow you to come in?

Jaden: I have everything on camera. I will see you soon.

Me: Jaden, wait.

Jaden: Yeah?

Me: Did you record us?

Jaden: I had my suspicions about your husbands. I was right. Let me go.

Bridget: Jaden, don't do anything stupid. Do you want us to die?

Jaden: Do I look like a fool to you, aunt? I will take care of this.

Me: But...

Jaden: Mom, I have a wife who's waiting for me at home. Don't waste my time any longer.

...

He walked away.

...

[REBAONE]

I was in Jaden's room when Jaden decided to scare me.

...

Me: Damn you, Jay. You gave me a fright.

Jaden: (Smiles) Sorry. What are you doing? Everyone is downstairs.

Me: Well, I wanted some time alone but you can join me.

...

He carefully looked at me from head to toe and started shaking his head.

...

Me: What's wrong?

Jaden: You look like someone who can fight.

Me: Get to the point.

Jaden: How did Kaden hit you, Naledi, Resego and Thuso at the same time?

...

I kept quiet and just stared at him.

...

Jaden: Four people and one person? How?

Me: He's a man.

Jaden: Mhmm, and what about you? Are you not the man around here? Do you remember when you wanted to commit suicide because of...

Me: Hey, this is different. Shut up.

...

He smiled and came closer to me.

...

Jaden: I have something for you.

Me: What is it?

Jaden: It's a necklace.

Me: (Smiles) Open the box.

Jaden: Sure.

...

He opened the box.

Me: Wow, it's beautiful.

Jaden: Let me help you put it around your neck

Me: Okay.

I turned around and allowed him to do whatever he wanted to do.

God, I love how close Jay is to me. My body is literally on fire. My blood is running through my veins like GauTrain. My heart is beating so fast and the way I am breathing right now is different. What is happening? I have never felt like this around any guy before. This is happening for the first time and I must

say that I am loving this feeling, it's so different and exciting but why now? Jaden also never made me feel this way before.

I turned around and looked into his eyes.

Jaden: What is it?

Me: Who are you?

Jaden: Huh?

Me: It's a good feeling. What did you do?

Jaden: What are you talking about?

I hugged him but he decided to "upgrade" what I was doing. He passionately kissed me.

GODDDDDDD???

Jaden is like a new man. Wow, this is soooo good. Thank you. But... But I... Kaden? I mean I was raped. This is not okay. Uhm... But Jaden does not mind and he doesn't look at me differently. The doctor told me that I am absolutely fine but he also told me that I should go for counseling but the truth is I don't need counseling. I WANT Jaden Jones. Am I even making sense? What do I really want?

To be continued...

28

[REBAONE]

Damien came running to the room and thank God, he stopped Jaden and I from what we were about to do. But why is Damien so scared and why are his hands full of blood?

...

Me: Damien, what's wrong?

Jaden: Damien, whose blood...

Damien: We don't have any time to waste. We need to get going.

...

He ran out of the room. Jaden and I did not know what was really happening but we followed Damien. We got downstairs and we were shocked to see Thuso lying on the pool of blood.

What happened to my brother? And why is he bleeding so much?

...

Jaden: Da-Damien, what happened?

Naledi: He was shot. We called the ambulance, it's soon going to be here.

Jaden: Shot? When?

Mackenzie: Brother, everything happened so fast. We don't know where that demon appeared from. She held Resego at gunpoint and told us that she's taking her. Thuso tried to help Resego but he got shot.

Jaden: Who are you talking about?

Mackenzie: Bianca.

...

I looked around me and realized that Resego was nowhere to be seen.

...

Me: Uhm... Did Bianca succeed in taking Resego?

Naledi: Yes, she did.

Me: She shot my brother and took my sister, but why? I am no longer with Kaden. I don't deserve this, it's too much for one person. Why is... is... is...

...

My head started spinning and things were getting blurry. I couldn't see properly and I was running out of breath.

...

Jaden: Reba, are you okay? Please sit down and...

...

I remember hitting the floor right there. What happened after that? I don't know. I fainted.

...

[FEW HOURS LATER]

[MACKENZIE]

God, what have I done? Everything is my fault. I told Reba that my surname is Koetle. Everything that is happening right now is because of me. Had I told the truth, Reba was never going to get married to Kaden. I am a fool and now innocent people are paying for my foolishness.

Naledi walked in our bedroom.

...

Naledi: Hey, please don't cry. Everything is going to be fine.

Me: Nal, I don't deserve to be forgiven.

Naledi: What are you talking about?

...

I told Naledi about the day Reba asked for my surname and how I happily said that my surname is Koetle.

...

Naledi: Come on, Kenzie. You can't blame yourself for everything.

Me: I should've told her the truth.

Naledi: You are right but would she have known that Kaden is your brother?

Me: Yes, she's smart. She would've told me that the surname of the man who was going to marry her is also Jones.

Naledi: Yeah, you might be right but everything is not your fault. You lied about your surname because you didn't want to lose any more friends.

Me: That's true but I really messed up. Reba and Thuso are now hospitalized because of me and Segoo was kidnapped right in front of us. I did this.

Naledi: No honey, don't do this to yourself. Reba would never want that.

...

I wiped away my tears and looked at Nal.

...

Me: How are they?

Naledi: The doctors managed to remove the bullet in Thuso's body. He's going to be fine. He is just in need of blood.

Me: Did they get the blood for him?

Naledi: Bridget said that she'll donate.

Me: Okay, that's better. And how's Reba?

Naledi: Uhm... I... She's okay.

Me: You are lying to me, aren't you?

...

Naledi cried her eyes out.

What is happening? I have never seen Naledi crying like this before. I hope that Reba is okay.

I comforted Naledi but I ended up crying with her. I was crying because Naledi was crying.

...

[SOME MINUTES LATER]

We stopped crying and just kept quiet. Damien knocked on the door and let himself in because we were not opening or saying anything.

...

Damien: Uhh... Didn't the two of you hear me knocking?

Naledi: What do you want, Damien?

Damien: Who's going to tell Reba the truth?

Naledi: I won't.

Me: The truth? What truth?

Damien: Didn't Naledi tell you?

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: No, she didn't tell me anything. What's going on?

Damien: Reba had a miscarriage.

Me: WHAT???

Damien: Yes, she's not yet awake but she needs to know about it.

Me: Was Reba pregnant?

Naledi: Mackenzie, for someone to have a miscarriage, pregnancy needs to take place. Obviously Reba was pregnant.

Me: I know that for somebody to get miscarriage... Uhh... Wait, was Reba already pregnant after being raped by Kaden? Didn't she get raped yesterday or was it the day before yesterday? Urgh... I did Life Sciences in High School, isn't it too soon to tell that someone is pregnant? You can take morning after pill

within three days after sexual intercourse and Reba did that.
How was she pregnant?

Naledi: You are really in the dark. Reba lost Jaden's baby, not Kaden's baby. Apparently Reba was already pregnant when Kaden raped her.

...

I kept quiet. I was so SHOCKED and UPSET at the same time.
Kaden, what have you done to Jaden?

...

Damien: Do you understand everything now?

Me: Wasn't Reba preventing? She told us that she was preventing.

Naledi: She thought she was.

Me: Huh?

Naledi: There was this one time when Reba went to the hospital to get her injection for prevention. Unfortunately the doctor gave her fertility injection and he was asked by Reba's father to do that.

Me: Huh? Why?

Naledi: Yes, Mackenzie. Thapelo knew that Reba went to the hospital to prevent pregnancy from taking place. He thought

that Reba didn't want to be a mother to Kaden's children so he asked the doctor to fool Reba and make her believe that she's preventing. This happened the day after Reba broke her virginity, I knew that Reba went to the hospital to prevent. Thapelo asked the doctor to fool Reba because he thought that Reba didn't want to have Kaden's children.

Me: And did he want Reba to have Kaden's children?

Naledi: Yeah.

Me: Wow. Who told you all this?

Damien: He was at the hospital and he confessed.

Me: Mr Mogale?

...

Damien nodded.

...

Me: Reba was at the hospital in the morning, today since from yesterday. Didn't the doctors know that she was pregnant?

Damien: The doctor who treated Reba yesterday was the same doctor who gave Reba fertility injection. Apparently he's a family doctor. He knew about the pregnancy that's why he didn't give Reba morning after pill. He thought that Kaden slept

with Reba before the wedding. He thought that Reba was already carrying Kaden's child.

Me: But he should lose his job. He's not to be trusted.

Naledi: Yeah, that's true.

Me: Reba told me that she had morning after pills today.

Damien: She thought that she had morning after pills but it wasn't morning after pills. The doctor gave her something else.

Me: Was it the same pills that killed the baby?

Naledi: No, the pills were completely harmless. Reba lost the baby due to stress and Kaden's beating.

Me: GOD!!!

Naledi: Yep.

Me: Oh my God, Reba's father betrayed Reba soooo much. This is not okay. He should go to jail for this.

Damien: Not only for this. He must go to jail for everything bad he did. I know that he was supporting your father.

Me: What are you talking about?

Damien: The burning down of my parents' house. I know everything.

...

Naledi and I looked at one another.

...

Me: How do you know?

Naledi: Yeah, who told you?

Damien: It's a long story. I need to get going. Always keep an eye on your phones. I will call you when Reba is awake.

Naledi: I am going with you.

Damien: No need, I am going to look for Jaden first.

Naledi: Where is he?

Damien: I don't know. He is a broken man wherever he is and he might kill someone.

Naledi: Okay. Are the police looking for Resego?

Damien: They want to wait for 24 hours but Bridget and Thapelo are doing something. Resego will be found in no time.

Me: Wow, a lot happened today.

Naledi: You can say that again.

Damien: I am leaving. Bye.

Naledi: Bye.

Me: Bye, D.

...

Damien left.

...

Naledi: I am going to the hospital. Are you coming with me, Mackenzie?

Me: No, I am not ready to face Reba.

Naledi: Are you still blaming yourself?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Naledi: Stop it. Your parents and Reba's parents are responsible for this. Don't do this to yourself.

Me: I lied about my surname - something I share with Reba's so called husband, Kaden. I should've told the truth.

Naledi: You should've told the truth but...

Me: But I didn't. The wedding took place because of me.

To be continued...

29

[THE NEXT DAY]

[REBAONE]

I woke up only to be surrounded by so many people, including Thuso. He's using a wheelchair but he looks like someone who is getting better but where is Resego?

...

Me: Uhh... Where is Resego?

Jaden: Hi honey, Resego is okay.

Me: Are you sure?

Jaden: Yes, I am sure.

Me: Did they find her?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: Nal, where is my sister?

Naledi: The police are looking for her. They will find her.

Me: And what are they doing here?

...

I looked at my parents.

...

Jaden: Uhm... They are here to see you.

Me: Tell them to leave.

Bridget: Honey, we are...

Me: Leave or else I'll hurt myself.

Thapelo: Reba, we care about you. We just want to...

Me: (Shouts) I SAID GET OUT OF HERE!!!

Jaden: I told them that they are not welcome here. They didn't want to listen to me. I'm glad that you don't want them here. They are responsible for what happened to you just like my parents.

Bridget: (Cries) We are so sorry, Reba. We didn't mean to hurt you.

Thapelo: Bridget, let's go. Let's give her some space.

Me: Don't even come back. I won't fall for your crocodile tears, Bridget Mogale.

...

They left. I looked at Thuso.

...

Me: How are you, honey?

Thuso: Well, I am okay. How are you?

Me: Thuso, you really scared me. Don't ever do that again.

Thuso: (Smiles) Okay.

...

[BIANCA]

God, what have I done? I shot someone and I also kidnapped someone. This is not me. I was never like this. Kaden did this to me. He turned me into a monster. I am going to jail. Why did I do this to myself? My mom always warned me to stay away from Kaden but I didn't listen to her.

...

Resego: Bianca, what are you going to do to me? You really look scared.

Me: Just shut up, you don't know anything.

Resego: Locking me up won't make Kaden love you. Let me go and I'll make sure that you don't end up in jail.

Me: I don't believe you.

Resego: Does your mom know that you kept me here?

Me: Just shut up.

Resego: (Smiles) You are really going down. I feel sorry for you.

Me: Nobody will find you.

Resego: Are you sure? You shot my brother and you kidnapped me. You are really going down.

...

I kept quiet.

She's right. I am as good as dead. I wasn't thinking straight. I did this because I love Kaden and I felt like Reba was taking him away from me.

...

Resego: Keeping quiet won't help you, you know?

Me: What do you want from me?

Resego: Do you believe that Kaden loves you?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Resego: Answer the question.

Me: I... Uhm... Yeah, he loves me. He's just confused.

Resego: He doesn't love you. He's in love with himself. Reba does not even love Kaden, she is Jaden's wife.

Me: What?

Resego: Oh... Didn't your boyfriend tell you? Reba and Jaden are married.

Me: Which Jaden are you talking about?

Resego: Kaden's twin brother.

...

What? Is she telling me the truth? How come I didn't know this? Things are now out of hand. I am going to jail and... Oh my God, Kaden did not tell me anything about Reba and Jaden and I went to see him the day before yesterday. Bianca, what have you done? How are you going to fix this?

...

[FEW DAYS LATER]

[REBAONE]

The people I live with are acting so strange around me and it's been days. No one is even willing to give me answers when I ask about my doctor. I haven't seen him ever since I regained consciousness.

I went to Naledi and Mackenzie's room.

...

Me: Hey girls, sorry for not knocking.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Naledi: Oh hey, it's okay.

Mackenzie: How are you?

Me: Schools are opening tomorrow, I am excited.

Naledi: You really love school.

Me: I don't but it's not that bad. Is everything okay?

Naledi: Are you asking me?

Me: Yes, Nal. I'm looking at you.

Naledi: Uhm.. Uhh... What are you talking about?

Me: Nobody wants to be around me, including you. Is it because I was raped?

Naledi: No, No, how can you say something like that?

Me: So why is everyone acting so strange around me? What have I done?

Mackenzie: Uhm... Reba, you really know how to ruin things. We were planning a surprise party for you.

Me: Oh, really?

Naledi: Yes, friend. But you are always curious.

Me: (Smiles) I am sorry but the truth is I don't want any party. My sister is still out there. How can I have a party? What will I be celebrating?

Naledi: Uhm... Yeah, you are right. We didn't think about it. We just wanted to lift your spirit. You have been through a lot, you know?

...

I nodded.

...

Me: Yeah, you are right. Thanks for everything but I don't want a party.

Mackenzie: It's okay. We understand. We will cancel all the plans we already made.

Me: (Smiles) Sure and please act normal around me. I need all of you.

Naledi: (Smiles) That's not a problem. We will always support you no matter what.

Me: Thank you. I'll be in the kitchen if you need me.

Mackenzie: Okay, no problem.

...

I left.

...

[NALEDI]

Me: Wow, you really know how to lie.

Mackenzie: You also know how to lie. She believed us.

Me: But staying away from her does not help her at all. She thinks that we are acting strange because she was raped. We can never do that.

Mackenzie: Yeah, you are right. We can never do that.

Me: She's just always asking about her family doctor and we can't tell her the truth because she will end up knowing the whole truth. She can be very inquisitive.

Mackenzie: Yeah, we really can't tell her about the miscarriage. Jaden is right, Reba won't be able to take it this time. She has been through a lot.

Me: Yeah, that's true.

...

If Jaden wants us to remain quiet about the miscarriage so be it. We know that he's really in love with Reba and he's doing what's best for her. Reba will never heal if we tell her the truth.

I know her, she's my friend. She fainted when she found out that Thuso was shot and Resego was kidnapped right in front of us. How can she handle the news of her pregnancy and the miscarriage? No, it's going to be too much on her. She doesn't deserve to go through so much pain. Jaden is right, Reba should not find out.

...

Mackenzie: Why are you so quiet?

Me: Jaden is right. We should not tell Reba anything.

Mackenzie: Yeah but I think that we should tell her something about her doctor.

Me: The truth?

Mackenzie: No, not the truth. Leave everything to me.

Me: Are you sure?

Mackenzie: Yeah, you can trust me on this one. I want us to be there for Reba and we should act normal around her.

Me: But Jaden is struggling to act normal because he's hurt.

Mackenzie: I am aware of that. I know Jaden, he will be happy once he sees Reba happy.

Me: Okay, I trust you.

...

We heard Reba screaming "She's here, she's here" downstairs and ran to her.

...

Mackenzie: Seggo??? Here???

Resego: (Smiles) Don't act like you didn't miss me. Give me a hug.

Mackenzie: Mhmm, you look okay. Were you not kidnapped?

Resego: I was kidnapped by a very sweet girl.

Rebaone: Bianca? Sweet?

Mackenzie: Bianca is not sweet, you must be dreaming.

Resego: I spent days with her. She's not a monster, believe me.

Me: (Laughs) Resego, what did you drink?

Resego: Bianca is not a monster. I have been eating well, sleeping well and also bathing.

Rebaone: Don't tell me that you are now friends with Bianca.

Me: She's crazy.

Resego: Where is everyone else?

Me: They went out. Maybe they went to work, I don't know.

Resego: Is Thuso working? Is he even fine? What happened here? Things are different and it...

Rebaone: Resego, how did you get out?

Resego: Bianca let me go and she handed herself over to the police.

Me, Rebaone & Mackenzie: WHAT???

To be continued...

30

[REBAONE]

I still don't understand how Resego can say that Bianca is a good person, I am not even interested in this stupid talk. Bianca is obviously up to something. I don't trust her and I will never trust her. She almost killed my only brother and she kidnapped my only sister. How is she a good person? I'm not falling for this.

I was about to walk away when Jaden walked in.

What's up with him? He looks restless.

...

Me: What's wrong?

Mackenzie: I was about to ask the same thing.

Me: Jaden, speak up. Is my brother okay? Where is he?

Jaden: Uhm... well... Oh hey, Resego. How are you? You look good. Were you really kidnapped?

Resego: (Smiles) Well, thank you. I look good and I also feel good.

Jaden: (Smiles) That's very goo...

Me: Jaden Jones, where is my brother? Why are you interested in foolish things?

Resego: Are you calling me a fool?

Me: Resego, not now.

Jaden: Well, your brother is fine but something else happened.

Me: What happened?

Jaden: Uhm... I... we... you see... a video... confession... and
uhm... I am very sorry but...

...

He kept quiet.

What the hell did he just say? I didn't get anything out of what
he said.

...

Mackenzie: Jay, what happened?

Jaden: We got him arrested. We had the proof, you know.

Mackenzie: Who are you talking about? Thuso?

Jaden: Of course not, I'm talking about Mr Mogale. He was
arrested like an hour ago.

Me: (Smiles) Tell me that you are joking?

Jaden: Why are you smiling? No, I'm not joking.

Resego: You did a good job, I don't know how you got him arrested but the truth is he is where he belongs.

Me: Exactly. That's an achievement but Bridget should also join her husband. They are both horrible.

Jaden: Hold on, are you telling me that you are not mad at me for what I did?

Me: No, you did a good thing.

Resego: A very good thing.

Me: I was coming for them. You made my job much easier. Thank you.

Naledi: But why are you only telling us now?

Jaden: I was scared to tell Reba. I didn't want to upset her. I wanted to come home a long time ago but I...

Me: (Giggles) Wow, you are so cute.

...

I hugged him.

...

Jaden: Oh, uhm... (Smiles) Thank you but there's another thing.

Me: Yeah?

Jaden: You and I are not married. Damien told me that he faked the documents and the photos.

...

I looked into his eyes and smiled.

...

Jaden: Why are you smiling?

Me: Jaden, I know everything. I did some “diggings” and I found out that we are not married. Damien lied and faked the documents and photos to save me from Kaden.

Jaden: Are you not angry?

Me: Must I always be angry for everything?

Jaden: (Smiles) Well, you are the best. Thank you for understanding.

Resego: Do you understand, Jaden? Are you okay with the fact that you are not Reba’s husband?

...

He kept quiet.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">(Smiles) uhm, I used to be very blind but now I can see. Living with Jaden opened my

eyes. I know that he's in love with me, if he's not then love is a liar. It made me believe that Jaden is in love with me. He loves me so much and the truth is I have also fallen for him. I tried to ignore the feelings I have for him but it's not easy at all, I failed. I love Jaden Jones and I am also in love with him.

...

Resego: Wow, why are the two of you quiet?

Mackenzie: They are in love with one another. Can the two of you be together already? You are so slow.

Naledi: They are really wasting our time. We have been waiting for them to express their feelings to one another but they are really slow. I'm gone.

...

Naledi went to her room, Resego and Mackenzie followed her. Jaden kissed my forehead and hugged me.

...

Me: (Smiles) Okay, what's going on?

Jaden: Sometimes words can't express what a person feels.

Me: What's your point?

Jaden: Actions speak louder than words. Are you really failing to understand my actions?

...

I attempted to break off the hug but he didn't let go of me. What could be more nicer than placing your head on the chest of the man you love? The feeling was really amazing.

...

Me: No, I'm not failing.

Jaden: Hugging you is always the best thing. Maybe I don't know how to express myself when it comes to love or maybe I'm always scared of getting hurt or being rejected but the truth is I love you so much, Reba. I can't help it anymore. I am really in love with you and I don't want to lose you. You make me so happy. I want you to be mine, I really do.

...

Tears of joy fell off my eyes.

God, you are really nice. You know how to heal my wounds. I never got this love from my parents and from my husband, Kaden but you decided to send Jaden to me, to heal my wounds and show me real love. I trust him and I trust his love. Thank you so much.

...

Jaden: Your silence is killing me. Don't you have anything to say at all?

...

I cried even more.

People like Jaden are very rare to find. His brother forced himself on me but he is still willing to be with me and make me happy. He chose me over his brother - his twin brother. He is really nice and I will never let go of him. He's in my life for a reason, he's heavenly sent. I love him so much and from now on I will always be there for him.

...

Jaden: It's okay, don't cry.

Me: I am just so happy. I am not crying because I am hurt, I am crying because I am so happy. You have brought happiness into my life. Thank you so much for being the person that you are. I also love you and I'm in love with you. I'm not saying this just to make you happy, I really mean everything. I didn't fall in love with you the first time I saw you. It took me time to finally fall in love with you. I took my time because I didn't want to make you a rebound, you know that I was in a relationship with Bongani and I was heartbroken when I caught him with another girl. I didn't want to jump into another relationship straight away and the truth is I saw you as a friend back then.

...

I broke off the hug, wiped away my tears and smiled.

...

Me: You are still my friend but you are out of the friend zone, I don't know if that makes sense.

Jaden: (Giggles) Well, I understand everything. Don't worry.

Me: I truly love you and I trust you with my life.

...

He smiled and kissed me. The three fools walked in and they couldn't stop cheering.

Clearly they didn't go to the bedroom, they were eavesdropping.

...

Naledi: I am really happy, congratulations.

Me: We are not getting married. Why are you so excited?

Mackenzie: We are excited because we have always wanted this. I can't wait for the two of you to have children.

Jaden: Did you have to say that?

Mackenzie: Uhm... I am really sorry. I didn't mean to bring that up.

Me: What's wrong with children, Jaden?

Jaden: There's nothing wrong with children. I just don't want anyone to put pressure on us. Our relationship is new. We just started dating like few minutes ago.

Me: Are you sure that it's only that?

Jaden: Yes, honey. I am very sure.

Me: Have you lost a baby before? You are always saying something about a lost baby.

Jaden: When did I say something about a lost baby?

Me: Every time, in your sleep. What's going on? Tell me, please.

To be continued...

31

[MACKENZIE]

Why do I have such a big mouth? Now Jaden is mad at me. I always ruin things for people. What kind of a person am I? I always get too excited. I am too much.

...

Rebaone: Jay?

Jaden: Yeah?

Rebaone: What's going on?

Jaden: I am tired. I'll be in my room.

...

Jaden walked away.

...

Rebaone: Kenzie, what's going on?

Me: I don't know. I guess he is scared of losing you.

Rebaone: How? I don't understand.

Me: I mean this thing of not wanting to talk about children. It's too soon, your relationship is still new.

Rebaone: I know that, I don't want a baby right now and I'm not talking about that. I'm talking about the baby Jaden is always talking about when he's asleep.

Me: Oh, well I don't know anything about that. I don't sleep with the two of you in your room.

Rebaone: It's okay, babe.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[BRIDGET]

I asked Jaden to come see me alone because I really want to talk to him. He's really a nice person.

...

Me: Thanks for coming, my dear.

Jaden: It's okay. How may I help you?

Me: You are a very nice person but I want to ask you something.

Jaden: Go ahead.

Me: My husband and your parents are in prison and they were denied bail. Is that what you really want?

Jaden: Yes, that's why I got them arrested. Take this opportunity to fix things with your children. Damien took Thuso to see a physiotherapist and he will always take him there for two weeks. You have the time to reach out to Thuso and tell him everything. He doesn't believe that you are a bad person.

Me: Are you serious?

Jaden: Yeah.

Me: But the person I really want to talk to is Reba. She's the eldest and she will help me talk to everyone.

Jaden: (Laughs) With all due respect, are you normal? Don't you know that Reba is angrier than everyone else? She'd even kill me for being here right now.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: You know that I'm right, that's why you are quiet.

Me: Yes, you are right. I'll reach out to Thuso.

Jaden: And forget about the ones in jail, they are where they should be.

Me: But your mother is innocent, I know her.

Jaden: I know and I'm working on getting her released. She was actually charged for domestic violence.

Me: Domestic violence?

Jaden: Abusing Reba.

Me: She never abused Reba.

Jaden: I know, the cops just took her with Kaden and Denis. They thought that she was also in the wrong. It will be sorted out very soon.

Me: Okay.

Jaden: Are we done?

Me: Well... Uhm... He's not that bad.

Jaden: Who is not that bad?

Me: My husband. He used to love me so much. Please give him a chance.

Jaden: You and your husband are the reason why Reba suffered. You are also the reason why Reba lost the baby.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: If you do anything to help your husband or my father, I will never forgive you and I will turn your life upside down just like the way you turned Reba's life upside down.

Me: Jaden, I am really sorry for everything. I never knew that things would get to this.

Jaden: Don't make a mistake of telling Reba anything about the miscarriage or the doctor being arrested.

Me: Okay, no problem. I really don't want to hurt her and I know that telling her the truth will kill her.

Jaden: Exactly. We are keeping quiet for her own good.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: I know. Thank you.

Jaden: I need to get going.

Me: Hold on.

Jaden: Yeah?

Me: Jackson was here in the morning.

Jaden: Jackson? The same man who promised your husband and my father more riches?

Me: Yes.

Jaden: What did he want?

Me: He is supposed to give out the money after two days but he changed things.

Jaden: I'm listening.

Me: He said that Kaden and Reba should have a baby in order for your father and my husband to get the money.

Jaden: Over my dead body. I can't believe that you entertained Jackson. Can't you see that he lied to all of you?

Me: Lied about what?

Jaden: Money. There's no money. He is fooling you.

Me: Why would he lie? He's an old friend of your father and my husband. We trust him.

Jaden: Get to the point. What are you really saying? Do you want Reba to go back to Kaden and have Kaden's child?

Me: No, I can never even think of that. I was just telling you. I don't want to hide anything from you. You already know a lot about this family.

Jaden: Jackson is a fraudster and I will prove that to you. Give me a month.

...

He walked out of the house.

Is Jackson really a fraudster? Was he lying to us all along? But why would he lie? What will he benefit?

...

[REBAONE]

Jaden just walked in the room and he looks absent minded. What is going on and where is he coming from?

...

Me: Hi, is everything okay?

Jaden: Huh? Are you talking to me?

...

I kept quiet and just stared at him.

Who else would I be talking to? Is he being serious right now?

...

Jaden: (Giggles) Oh, of course you are talking to me. Uhm, well I'm fine. I am just tired.

Me: Where are you coming from?

...

He told me everything.

How can he go to see Bridget behind my back? He betrayed me but I am happy that he did not hide this from me. I hate lies and I don't want people to hide things from me.

...

Jaden: Please say something.

Me: I don't like the fact that you didn't tell me before going there but it's fine, I forgive you.

Jaden: (Smiles) Thank you. I love you.

Me: I love you too. Let's promise one another that we will always be honest and respectful. We should not lie to one another.

Jaden: I promise.

Me: Kaden is where he belongs. I don't know how I'll get him to sign the divorce papers but...

Jaden: Let's not worry about that for now. Let's give it some months. Everything will be fine.

Me: Okay, babe.

Jaden: Do you love children?

Me: Yeah, I do. Why are you asking?

Jaden: How would you feel if you were to get a miscarriage?

Me: JADEN!!!

Jaden: What? I am not wishing it upon you, I am just asking.

Me: I can never be happy after losing the baby. No woman deserves to go through that. I don't think that I can heal. I don't even want to talk about a miscarriage. It's a bad thing.

Jaden: I understand.

...

He kissed my forehead and hugged me.

God, thank you for giving me a tall man. Wow, his hugs are so warm and he smells so goooooood.

...

[KADEN]

Now that I escaped from jail, I am going to get my wife back. The cops made a mistake by taking me to prison cells, from the hospital. I recovered and I had to escape. I am a free man and I want my wife back. How can I allow Jaden to take away my wife? He's crazy. All hell will break loose. Nobody takes anything away from me and gets away with it.

To be continued...

32

[SOME DAYS LATER]

[REBAONE]

We have been told that Kaden escaped from prison so now the cops are always guarding our house and going everywhere with us, it's actually annoying but it's for our own good. Kaden is really annoying. What does he want? Why did he escape? Doesn't he want to change? He better not come anywhere near me, Jaden will kill him this time.

Resego walked in.

...

Resego: Hey, big sis.

Me: Hey, how was school?

Resego: It was okay thanks and how was yours? Hold on, did you even go to school?

Me: Yeah, I did and my classes ended earlier than expected.

Resego: Why?

Me: The lecturer was not doing well. Tell me something, why did you fight at school?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: Resego, I am not talking to myself now, am I?

Resego: That girl was talking rubbish about our family, what does she know?

Me: What did she say?

Resego: She said that our family is messed up. She said all the wrong things and I beat her up. I was just angry. I am sorry.

...

She walked away. Damien walked in.

...

Damien: Hey, is everything okay?

Me: I blame Bridget and Thapelo for everything. Resego was fighting at school today because some girl was talking nonsense about my family. She was so mean. Resego's friend told me everything.

Damien: Don't you think that you should all go for counseling?

Me: Who are you talking about?

Damien: You, Resego and Thuso. You are all affected by what happened.

Me: And what about you? Aren't you affected by what happened to your family?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: I think that we all need counseling. You, me, Jaden, Resego, Thuso, Mackenzie and Naledi. We have been through a lot. Naledi is not always here because she is sometimes at her place but believe me when I say that she is also not coping. What Kaden did to us really reminded her of...

...

I kept quiet.

...

Damien: Reminded her of what? Her ex boyfriend?

Me: Did she tell you something about her ex boyfriend?

Damien: Yes, I know everything. She told me.

Me: Well, yeah. He was abusive just like Kaden. He almost killed her. Naledi is strong but I know that what Kaden did reminded her of the past. We all need counseling.

Damien: Yeah, I guess you are right.

Me: (Smiles) What's going on between you and Naledi? You seem to be very close. She even tells you things like you are me, her best friend.

Damien: (Giggles) You are nosey. Leave me alone. I want to go back to work.

Me: (Smiles) Fine. Go. You always leave me alone... All of you. I have been alone in the house until you and Resego came.

Damien: You were not alone. You were with the cops.

Me: The cops are outside and they are not my friends. Where is Thuso?

Damien: Physiotherapy. I took him there before bringing Resego here.

Me: Oh, so you came here with Resego?

Damien: Yeah.

Me: From school?

Damien: Yeah.

...

I hugged him.

...

Me: God will bless you. Thank you for everything.

Damien: Don't thank me, we are all family. I'll see you later, okay?

Me: Sure.

...

He left. I went to the laundry room to do the washing and I was shocked to see Kaden.

Kaden Jones? Here? How? The cops are guarding the house so how did Kaden get in? I am so dead.

He quickly closed the door and stood before me.

...

Kaden: I'm not here to fight

Me: What do you want? I will scream.

...

He knelt down before me.

...

Kaden: Babe, I am very sorry. Please forgive me for everything and give me another chance.

Me: Chance? What chance? You raped me, Kaden Jones and you beat me up, not only me, you also hit my siblings and my best friend. You are a monster.

Kaden: I'm a changed man.

Me: Changed man, my foot. A changed man can never do what you did.

Kaden: What did I do?

Me: You escaped from prison. It's not okay.

Kaden: I escaped for a good reason. I... I...

...

Tears fell off his eyes. He left me shocked.

Kaden Jones? Crying? How is this possible? What is he up to?

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Me: You don't have to shed crocodile tears, Kaden. I will never forgive you for what you did.

Kaden: But I didn't mean to hurt you. I was stupid but I am a good man now. I have wronged you and I am sorry.

Me: (Laughs) Kaden, that's bullshit. Try something else.

Kaden: I was blind but now I can see. You are a good woman and you deserve to be loved.

Me: You have been in prison for two minutes and you believe that you are a changed man? you are crazy.

Kaden: Baby, I am sorry. Give me one last chance.

Me: I am a married woman. I am your brother's wife. You need to stay away from me.

Kaden: How can you leave me for Jaden?

Me: You and I were forced to get married. Don't act like you love me. I am not leaving you for Jaden, I was never yours.

...

He got up and wiped away his tears.

...

Kaden: Do you trust Jaden?

Me: Yes, I do. I trust him with my life.

Kaden: (Laughs) You must be crazy.

Me: Please leave, Kaden.

Kaden: Do you know where your family doctor is?

Me: Yeah, I do. Why are you talking about my family doctor?

Kaden: Do you know where he is?

Me: Yes. He went to Dubai with his family.

Kaden: (Laughs) Who told you that?

Me: Mackenzie.

Kaden: Everyone is fooling you. Do you even know what happened to you?

...

I kept quiet.

What is he talking about? Who is fooling me and what happened to me?

...

Kaden: Do you know what happened to you? Answer me.

Me: Well, what are you talking about?

Kaden: Nobody loves you but I love you. Jaden does not love you and your parents d...

Me: Enough. Don't say anything bad about Jaden.

Kaden: (Smiles) He is also lying to you. Don't you hate liars?

Me: Get to the point, Kaden.

Kaden: Okay.

...

He gave me a smirk. He was really feeling himself.

...

Me: What? Speak.

Kaden: Your doctor did not go to Dubai with his family. He was arrested like days back.

Me: Arrested for what?

Kaden: He violated the rules of being a doctor. Are you sure that you want to know what happened?

...

Arrested? But Mackenzie... What? Is Kaden telling the truth?

...

Me: Yes, I want to know everything. What's going on?

Kaden: Your doctor wronged you and...

...

He told me things that shocked me.

Is he lying? Fertility injection? Was I really not preventing?

But... No, Kaden is lying. Jaden would've told me the truth. We made a promise to one another. We said that we will never lie or hide things from... Hold on, but... No, no, no. Kaden is lying.

...

Kaden: Why are you quiet? You should be thanking me.

Me: Please leave. You are a liar.

Kaden: (Laughs) You feel like a fool right now, don't you? I mean everyone lied to you but I care about you that's why I am telling you the truth.

Me: I don't believe you.

Kaden: You should tell Jaden that you know everything and wait for his reaction. He blinks three times when he's lying, about to lie or nervous. He's my twin brother, I know him.

...

Oh, I didn't know this. I never paid attention to some things. I will have to ask Jaden about my doctor and pay attention to his eyes.

...

Me: All the eyes?

Kaden: No, his left eye. It blinks when he's lying, about to lie or when he's nervous. Everyone lied to you and it's not okay. You deserve better.

Me: How do you know so many things about the doctor and what he did?

Kaden: Uhm... That's not your business. I love you and I want to make things right. Please forgive me for everything and give me a chance. I won't hurt you again, I promise.

Me: Leave, Kaden.

Kaden: Why are you not calling the cops? Is it because you also love me?

...

I laughed.

...

Me: Love? Are you crazy?

Kaden: Don't fight it, baby girl. I am your husband.

Me: No, you are not my husband. Jaden is my husband. We are really married. We are legally married.

Kaden: (Smiles) I don't believe that. You are mine and I am going to fight for you.

Me: Why are you smiling? You are so annoying

...

He winked at me and left.

Did everyone lie to me? I really hate liars. Let's hope that Kaden is lying. Jaden Jones, I am going to pay attention to your left eye. It better not blink three times.

To be continued...

33

[KADEN]

I used a very huge pipe to get in the yard and the house and I used it again to go outside but I was shocked to see the cops surrounding me just when I got out of the pipe.

Who called the cops on me? How did they even know that I used the pipe? Did Reba tell them? But how did she know that I used the pipe?

Jaden appeared from nowhere.

...

Me: Uhh, Jaden?

Jaden: What? Did you really think that I would let you get away? I saw you when you came in. This is my house, I know all the corners better than you think you do.

Me: Aren't you supposed to be at work?

Jaden: Aren't you supposed to be in jail?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: I am not Reba. She let you go because you are my twin brother. You hurt her so much but she still let you go. I am not good like her. You are my brother and I love you but you have to pay for what you did.

Me: Love? What do you know about love? Nobody loves me.

Jaden: Oh, here we go again. Must you always say such things?

Me: It's the truth. I am exactly like my father and I don't think that I can ever change. You are a good person that's why you are loved.

Jaden: You chose to be like your father.

Me: Our father.

Jaden: I don't have a father. I only have a mother.

Me: You are crazy just like your father.

Jaden: And you are abusive just like your father.

Me: Abusive?

Jaden: You heard me.

Me: Do you also know?

Jaden: Know what?

Me: Know that our father is abusive?

...

He kept quiet.

I thought that he was in the dark. I thought that I witnessed everything on my own. I thought that Denis corrupted only my mind. Does Jaden really know what is happening?

...

Me: Jaden?

Jaden: What?

Me: Please answer me.

...

I saw tears in his eyes when he answered me.

...

Jaden: Yes, I know everything. I have seen it all and I continued to act like it was just in my head.

Me: Did you also act like it was just a suspicion?

...

He kept quiet.

I have seen it all and kept it to myself. I saw how Denis would hit my mother and call her names but guess what I did? I acted like it was just in my head and I also acted like it was just a suspicion - Suspecting that Denis is abusing Mavis. Crazy, right?

Well, that's what you do when you don't want to believe something. I also became this other monster, I made sure that my mom is always scared of me. Why? Because I was mad at her for being weak, she is still weak and I am still mad. I got used to being a monster and I made sure that I hurt everyone around me just to heal my own pain. Denis Jones is a monster and I am what I am because of him. I love my mom so much but I can never tell her because I am very mad at her. How can she be so weak?

Tears fell off my eyes and they were not crocodile tears. I was really hurting.

...

Jaden: [Is Kaden crying? What happened to him? He doesn't look like someone who is acting.]

The Cop: We don't have the whole day, Kaden Jones. Let's get going.

Jaden: Please wait.

Me: No, Jaden. I need to go. I feel horrible. I need to go. I need to be alone.

...

I have been selfish for so many years. I hurt people around me just to heal my own wounds but I didn't know that Jaden was

going through the same thing. I didn't know that he was also in so much pain. Why didn't he tell me anything? We were gonna share our pain. He decided to be a good person in order to heal his wounds and what did I do? I decided to be a very bad person in order to heal my own wounds. God bless Jaden Jones and please apologize to him for me.

...

I began to walk away.

...

Jaden: Kaden, please wait.

Me: No, I deserve this.

...

I left with the cops.

...

[REBAONE]

Jaden walked in the laundry room. He was troubled.

...

Me: Hey babe, is everything okay?

Jaden: I am not able to read minds. I don't know what's happening but I was touched.

Me: What are you on about?

Jaden: I saw a different side of him. A different man. A very sad man.

Me: Who are you talking about?

Jaden: Kaden.

Me: Oh, he was here.

Jaden: I know.

Me: I let him go.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Jaden: I know. It's okay. The cops took him.

Me: Sure. What's going on?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: Babe?

Jaden: It's too much. I just need a peaceful life without pain or sorrow. Am I asking for too much?

Me: No, you are not. I understand what you are saying and I support what you are saying.

...

He knelt down and just cried.

What's going on? I have never seen him like this before. He's really hurting my feelings right now. What can I do to help him? I don't even know what he is going through.

I went closer to him, knelt down and hugged him. Tears also rolled down my face.

...

Me: What's wrong, Jay?

Jaden: It's too much. It's really too much. People expect me to be perfect but the truth is I am not perfect. I also get hurt.

Me: What happened?

Jaden: Everything is wrong, Reba. The burden is weighing me down.

Me: Are you talking about me?

Jaden: You are not a burden. I love you so much and I want to come clean.

Me: I am listening.

Jaden: Please forgive me for everything. I hid the truth from you because I didn't want to hurt you. You have been through a lot and you deserve to be happy.

Me: What's going?

Jaden: You were pregnant and you lost the baby.

Me: Jaden, that's a bad joke:

...

He continued to cry and I saw how serious he was. I got up and looked at him.

...

Me: Jaden, what did... How... What...

Jaden: I am so sorry.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: I am also hurt. I felt defeated. I didn't want such a thing to happen.

Me: Please tell me everything.

...

He began to tell me everything. I was shattered.

...

Me: Thapelo Mogale did all this?

Jaden: Yes, he did.

Me: And the doctor I trusted with my life did this to me?

Jaden: I am sorry.

Me: Jaden, why am I alive?

Jaden: What do you mean? You must be alive for you, for me, for your siblings and for everyone who loves you.

...

He sat down next to me and comforted me. We were both in tears and comforting one another. Crazy, right?

...

[FEW DAYS LATER]

[BIANCA]

I got released from jail, all thanks to Resego and Thuso. I just want to apologize to Reba for everything. I am tired of fighting and I don't want to continue to fight for Kaden. He doesn't love me at all.

...

Me: Thank you so much, Resego and Thuso.

Thuso: I didn't want to come here, I came here because Resego told me that you are sorry for what you did. I hope that you are really sorry.

Me: Yes, I am very sorry. I was blinded by love. I was fighting for something that doesn't exist.

Resego: We all make mistakes. Nobody is perfect. I believe that you are not a bad person. You were forced by the situation... to be a bad person.

Me: (Smiles) I want to apologize to everyone but firstly I need to see Reba, where can I find her?

Thuso: We will take you to her.

Resego: But we should be there with you. She is not doing good at all.

Me: What happened?

Resego: We don't know. She only talks to Jaden about the things bothering her.

Me: (Smiles) They share true love. May God bless them and keep them together forever.

Resego: (Smiles) Amen.

Thuso: Let's get going, please. I am meeting with Bridget later.

Resego: For what?

Thuso: She wants me to help her. She is willing to tell Reba everything.

Me: And what about apology? Will she also apologize to Reba?

Thuso: Yeah, that's what she said.

Me: Wow, that's nice.

To be continued...

34

[THE ORPHANAGE]

[REBAONE]

Who ever knew that I'd find peace in this place? Jaden and I made a decision to always help out with anything we can in this orphanage. This place gives us so much strength. We don't want to forget about the baby we lost but we are also not willing to stop living. We want to be around children anytime we want and this orphanage will help us heal. People heal in different ways and this is how Jaden and I wants to heal.

I was preparing an afternoon meal for the children when Resego and Thuso walked in with Bianca.

...

Resego: Hey, Reba.

Me: Resego.

Bianca: Reba, hey. Uhm... I...

Me: What are you doing here?

Bianca: I'd love to talk to you.

...

I looked at Thuso.

...

Me: Don't you know how to greet? Did I spend the day with you?

Thuso: No, I was going to...

Me: I heard what you did. Why did you set her free? She almost killed you.

Thuso: Reba, everybody deserves a second chance.

Me: Did anyone give my baby a second chance?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Resego: Sister, I heard what happened to you when I was kidnapped. I am really sorry.

Me: Bianca also killed my baby.

...

They all kept quiet.

...

Me: I lost the baby because of the beating I got from Kaden and because of stress, am I right or wrong?

Resego: You are right. That's what they said.

...

I looked at Thuso.

...

Thuso: Yes, you are right,

Me: Was Bianca not the last person to add to my stress by shooting you and kidnapping Resego?

...

Thuso kept quiet.

...

Me: Thuso, answer me. I need an answer right now.

Thuso: Uhm... I guess so.

Me: You guess so?

Thuso: Sister, you are right about everything but...

Me: You set her free without asking me. Go ahead and celebrate. Count me out. I want nothing to do with Bianca.

Bianca: Reba, I am...

Me: Bianca, don't talk to me. I am cooking for the children. Don't make me cook you.

Resego: Sister, Bianca is a changed person. Please give her a chance.

Me: Was my baby given a chance by Bianca?

Resego: What I mean is...

Me: Yes or No, Resego?

...

She kept quiet.

...

Me: You should all leave. I am not in the mood to entertain you.

Thuso: Reb...

Me: I am done talking.

...

I walked out of the kitchen.

Why am I always taken for granted and later expected to be forgiving? I am also human and I have feelings just like everyone else. Must I always be told to jump and ask how high? Everyone who is in my life for the wrong reasons can go to hell. I am tired of being hurt.

...

[RESEGO]

Reba is still very hurt and I understand but how are we supposed to help her heal if she is always shutting us out? She only tells Jaden everything, we are always in the dark.

...

Me: I will be right back.

Bianca: Where are you going?

Me: I am going to talk to Reba. She might listen to me.

Bianca: Okay.

...

I followed Reba.

...

Me: Reba.

Rebaone: What is it, Resego Mogale?

Me: I understand that you are hurting but please allow us to help you.

Rebaone: Have you lost a baby before?

Me: No.

Rebaone: So how are you planning to help me?

Me: You can talk to me about everything and I...

Rebaone: I will get the help I need from this place. I am mourning right now, is that wrong?

Me: No, it's not wrong but you are shutting us out.

Rebaone: (Cries) What do you want me to do, Segó? How will you share this pain with me? It's going to be too much for you. Focus on your studies. Jaden will help me heal and I will also help him heal. This place will help us heal, we will be fine.

...

I hugged her and cried with her.

...

Me: I love you so much and I don't want to see you hurt.

Rebaone: I know but I will be fine. I know that I am strong.

Me: Even the strong people need a shoulder to cry on.

Rebaone: I got that. I don't want to cry on your shoulder. There's one thing you can do for me.

Me: What is it?

Rebaone: Study hard and pass with good marks. Can you do that for me?

Me: Yes, I can do that for you.

...

She broke off the hug and looked at me.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Rebaone: I love you so much but don't force me to forgive Bianca. I don't have a forgiving heart right now. Please allow me to heal first.

Me: Okay, sister.

...

She wiped away my tears and kissed my forehead.

...

Rebaone: Don't come here with that girl again. I don't want to see Bianca or Bridget or Thapelo or Kaden or Kaden's parents. They all broke my heart into pieces. I was willing to forget about what Kaden did but not anymore because I know that he also killed my baby.

Me: But do you know that Mavis is out of jail?

...

She nodded.

...

Me: Are you okay with that?

Rebaone: Yeah but that doesn't mean I have forgiven her.

Me: Why are you mad at her?

Rebaone: She was supporting her husband through everything just like Bridget.

Me: Okay, I need to get going.

Rebaone: No problem.

Me: Don't forget to check up on the food.

Rebaone: Sure. I turned off the stove.

...

I wiped away her tears.

...

Me: I will always love you no matter what.

Rebaone: Me too.

...

She kissed my forehead and walked away.

God, please be with my sister through this time of her life. She is in need of you now more than before. I know that she is still good hearted, she is just hurting right now. Please take care of her broken heart.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

[JADEN]

I heard that Reba had a bad day and that she couldn't stop crying but I know the person who will make her feel better. She has a very strong and good connection with one of the orphans here. The little girl's name is Mimi and she's four years old. I had taken Mimi out today with the other children and we are back now. Reba's day will get better.

...

Me: Mimi, please go and check up on Reba. I know that you are missing her a lot.

...

She ignored me.

...

Me: Mimi?

...

She still kept quiet. I giggled.

...

Me: Oh, sorry. You are quiet because you want to be called Cute Mimi. Okay, I made a mistake. Cute Mimi, please say something.

Mimi: (Smiles) Brother Jay, I will go.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, beautiful. She is in your bed, you know that she loves it.

Mimi: Of course she does. Bend over to me, please.

Me: Okay, Cute Mimi.

...

I did as I was told. She kissed my forehead and smiled.

...

Mimi: Thank you soooo much.

Me: For what, beautiful?

Mimi: (Smiles) For loving me. I had a great day.

Me: (Smiles) You are welcome.

...

She winked at me and walked away.

Wow, Reba and I love all the children of this orphanage but Cute Mimi is just different. She's heavenly sent. She's different and special.

...

[REBAONE]

I was resting my eyes when Mimi... Uhm... I mean Cute Mimi walked in and kissed my cheek. I smiled and opened my eyes.

...

Me: You are late. All the children already came to say hi to me and what about you?

Mimi: (Smiles) Sorry, sister. I missed you so much.

Me: And I missed you more that's why I am...

Mimi: (Smiles) That's why you are sleeping in my bed.

Me: Smart girl,

Mimi: How was school?

Me: I didn't have classes today.

Mimi: Okay. You look sad, what's wrong?

Me: I missed you.

Mimi: I don't believe you. You are sad because of everything bad that happened to you. You lost a baby, right?

Me: How do you know?

Mimi: I heard you talking to brother Jay yesterday. Sorry, I didn't mean to eavesdrop. I just wanted to find out what's really bothering you.

Me: Okay, Cute Mimi.

Mimi: Sister, you are a good person. God will see you through.

...

I sat straight and kissed her cheeks.

...

Me: Mhmm, you talk like a grown woman. I like that.

Mimi: The owner of this place taught us to be positive. She's a very good woman, you know?

Me: (Smiles) Yes, I know. She's good just like you.

Mimi: (Smiles) Can I please tell you something?

...

I nodded.

...

Mimi: I also lost my mommy. I never met her but I thank God for keeping me alive. He kept me alive for a reason.

...

God, who is Mimi? She doesn't speak like a four year old child. Is she heavenly sent? She knows how to make me feel better. The owner of this orphanage, Mrs Khoza is also doing a great job. Her teachings will do good to all the children of this orphanage. May God bless her.

To be continued...

35

[FEW DAYS LATER]

[JADEN]

I told Reba's mother that I will find out who Jackson really is and I did but now I am worried about Reba. I have asked her to come to my workplace because I really want to tell her everything about Jackson before I tell her mother.

...

Me: How are you, honey?

Rebaone: I am fine thanks and how are you?

Me: I am okay. Let me get straight to the reason why I called you here.

Rebaone: Sure.

Me: Mrs Khoza and Jackson are related.

Rebaone: Jackson? The same man you don't trust?

Me: Yeah.

Rebaone: How are they related?

Me: Jackson is Mrs Khoza's husband.

...

Her jaws dropped.

...

Me: Well, I was also shocked when I found out.

Rebaone: Are you telling me that Mrs Khoza is working with her husband to get money out of people?

Me: No, I don't think that they are still married.

Rebaone: Will I also lose Mimi? Am I going to lose again? Am I ever...

Me: Babe, please relax. I said that I don't think that Mrs Khoza and Jackson are still together.

Rebaone: Uhm... What if they are still together? What if they are working together? What if they will end up taking Mimi away from me? What if they will ban us from going to the orphanage? Shouldn't I be worried, honey?

...

I kept quiet because I didn't have answers to her questions.

...

Rebaone: Let's kidnap Mimi, please.

Me: What?

Rebaone: You heard me. I love the other children but I love Mimi more. I want her to live with us.

Me: Babe, we can't kidnap Mimi. Do you want us to end up behind bars? Do you want us to lose Mimi forever?

...

She shook her head.

...

Me: Mrs Khoza will soon be here. I want to talk to her. She might be different. You have seen her around all the children. She treats them good.

Rebaone: Okay.

...

Damien walked in.

...

Me: Damien, don't you know how to knock?

Damien: I am sorry. I didn't know that you are with someone. Well, it's good that the two of you are here. I need to tell you something very important.

Me: What is it?

Damien: The docket is missing and we all know that the investigation was still taking place. The detective was not done with investigations and now the docket is missing. All the evidence is also missing. We all know what that means.

Me: Yeah, we do. Who did all this?

Rebaone: Are they really going to be set free just like that?

Damien: They are already out. Apparently everything is gone and it has been two days. They are free now. They were set free like an hour ago.

Rebaone: Wow, I wonder who did this. Who would want to save them?

Damien: I wish I knew.

Rebaone: I am so sorry, Damien. I really wanted justice for you and your parents. I know that those people wronged all of us but you didn't deserve to go through what you went through because of my stupid wedding.

Me: And we had solid proof. I can't believe that everything is gone. I am disappointed.

Rebaone: What now?

Damien: I am tired of fighting. Let's not do anything.

Rebaone: Damien, do you want to give up just like that?

Damien: Yes I do, I just want a normal life. My parents' house was insured. Everything will be fine.

Rebaone: Will insurance cover everything?

Damien: I don't know.

Me: Just tell us if you need anything, please.

Rebaone: Yes, D. Do that.

Damien: Okay, no problem.

...

Somebody knocked on the door.

...

Damien: I will get that.

Rebaone: She's finally here.

Damien: Who?

Me: Get the door. You'll find out.

Damien: Okay.

...

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">He opened the door and let Mrs Khoza in.

...

Me: You are welcome, Mrs Khoza. Please take a sit.

...

She smiled and sat down.

...

Mrs Khoza: Is everything okay?

Me: How is your husband?

Mrs Khoza: My husband?

Me: Yes, your husband.

Mrs Khoza: I don't have a husband. You must be asking about my ex husband, Jackson.

Me: Yes, I am.

Mrs Khoza: My dear, I don't like talking about that bitter man. Why did you ask me to come here?

Rebaone: Mrs Khoza, why are you still using your husband's surname if you are not happy with him?

Mrs Khoza: That man does not want to sign the divorce papers. He's a fraudster. I found out so many things about him and I don't want him to be around me. He's a bitter man.

Me: What's his relationship with Thapelo Mogale and Denis Jones?

Mrs Khoza: What's going on? Is everything okay?

Me: Please answer the question and I will tell you everything later.

Mrs Khoza: Well, Thapelo Mogale and Denis Jones used to be Jackson's friends.

Rebaone: Used to be?

Mrs Khoza: Yes, used to be.

Rebaone: Are they no longer friends?

Mrs Khoza: No. Thapelo and Denis once got this other big contract that brought them lot of money and Jackson was jealous to a point whereby he made a promise to himself.

Rebaone: What promise?

Mrs Khoza: He promised himself that he will destroy them. Thapelo and Denis loves money so Jackson got fake papers and lied to them.

Me: What papers?

Mrs Khoza: He got this other papers that shows that Thapelo and Denis should get their children married in order to get hold of this other money. The documents further explains that

Thapelo and Denis' children will have to have a baby in order for Thapelo and Denis to get the full amount of money they signed up for. It's just a long, boring story.

Rebaone: No, it can't be boring. You need to tell us everything, please.

Mrs: Okay. Well, the papers are fake. They look real but they are not real. Jackson loves fraud so much.

Me: Is he ever going to give Thapelo and Denis their money?

Mrs Khoza: There's no money. He's the only one benefitting.

Me: How?

Mrs Khoza: Thapelo and Denis paid him. It's like investment but the problem is that Thapelo and Denis will not get anything at the end. They will keep on giving money to Jackson when he asks for it, thinking that they will get more money at the end but the truth is they won't get anything.

Damien: I am curious. Why do you say that they won't end up getting money?

Mrs Khoza: Because Jackson is planning to leave South Africa after getting the final, big amount of money from Thapelo and Denis. He is going to ask them for two million each.

...

Wow, Jackson really knows how to make money out of people. He's a real genius but his time is up. Reba suffered because of his doings.

...

Damien: Did he tell you everything?

Mrs Khoza: Yes, he tells me everything because he knows that I don't know the people he's always going after.

Me: Would you do something if you knew them?

Mrs Khoza: Listen, I know Thapelo and Denis. I have met them like years back but I don't know where they live and I am not interested in knowing because I don't want to get involved.

Me: You are now involved, Mrs Khoza:

Mrs Khoza: How?

Me: You care about Reba, don't you?

Mrs Khoza: Yes, I do.

Me: And what about me?

Mrs Khoza: I also care about you. I love all of you so much. You are nice people,

Me: Do you know our parents?

Mrs Khoza: No, I don't. Why are you asking me that question?

Me: Thapelo is Reba's father and Denis is my father.

Mrs Khoza: Are you serious?

Me: Yes. Let me tell you everything.

...

I began to tell her everything about the marriage, the evil plans, what Reba went through, what I went through and how things are right now.

...

Mrs Khoza: Oh my God, I am so sorry. What can I do to help?

Me: Would you go against your husband for us?

Mrs Khoza: Definitely.

Me: Steal the documents and record your husband when he starts talking about Thapelo and Denis.

Mrs Khoza: Okay, I can do that.

Me: Thank you so much. You will save our parents. We are still mad at them but they don't deserve to lose money like it's nothing. Thank you so much, Mrs Khoza. You are heavenly sent

To be continued...

36

[FEW DAYS LATER]

[REBAONE]

I was walking from school when Bongani came running after me.

...

Me: Why are you following me?

Bongani: Babe, why have you been ignoring me?

Me: Bongani, what do you want?

Bongani: I love you.

Me: (Laughs) Love me? Do I look like I need your love?

Bongani: Where's your car? Did they take it?

Me: Who are you talking about?

Bongani: I heard about what happened to your family. You must be happy. They troubled us a lot. We can be together now.

Me: (Laughs) I love your sense of humor. It's awesome. Are you done?

Bongani: Are we still together?

Me: Don't you know that I'm married?

Bongani: To that monster, Kaden Jones? The same guy who almost killed you?

...

Wow, bad news travel so fast. People already know what happened. They know everything about my family and the truth is I am happy that they know the real Mogales and the real Jones. My parents were known as the best parents so I am happy that the truth is out. They had to be exposed.

...

Bongani: Why are you smiling?

Me: Bongani, are you still here? Didn't I tell you to get lost?

Bongani: Sorry baby but I really want to talk to you.

Me: You have been talking.

Bongani: I want you back. Everything is fine now.

Me: Is everything fine only when you say it? Should I live my life the way you want me to live it?

Bongani: No, that's not what I meant.

Me: So what are you really saying? Who said that everything is fine?

Bongani: You look happy.

Me: Yes, I am happy but it's not because of you. It's because of my husband.

Bongani: Kaden?

Me: I thought gossipers told you everything. I was never married to Kaden Jones. I am Jaden Jones' wife. I got married to him before I went down the aisle with Kaden so this means that my marriage with Kaden is not really a marriage. It's fake.

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: Please stay away from me. You helped me by cheating on me, now I found a good man and his name is Jaden Jones.

...

I picked up my pace and left him standing alone. Thapelo's car pulled over next to the road.

...

Me: Oh, here is another one. What do you want?

Thapelo: Where's your car?

Me: Who are you to ask me that question?

Thapelo: I am the person who bought you that car.

Me: And I am the person who sold that car. Do you have a problem with that?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: Stay away from me, Thapelo Mogale.

Thapelo: Baby, won't you forgive me for what I did? I didn't mean to hurt you.

Me: Are you done?

Thapelo: Please get in the car.

Me: For what?

Thapelo: I'll take you home. You can't walk. It's far.

Me: I am walking to the taxi rank.

Thapelo: What? Why don't you take Uber?

Me: Why? Are my legs yours? Am I walking with your legs to the taxi rank?

Thapelo: No but I don't want my child to take public transport. People will look down on me.

Me: (Laughs) They are already doing that. They know how horrible you are. The whole Province is talking about you.

Thapelo: I will shut their mouth. I will make more money. I am going to meet up with Jackson tomorrow and I am going to give him two million, all thanks to you.

Me: All thanks to me? What have I done?

Thapelo: You refused to give Kaden a baby and I totally understand. You love Jaden but now I have to lose two million because of your heart.

...

Oh, so everything is happening tomorrow? I have to tell Jaden and Mrs Khoza. Jackson must be exposed.

...

Me: Okay, Thapelo. Do whatever you want, I don't care.

Thapelo: Please get in the car. I will take you wherever you want to go to.

Me: No, I am not walking to the taxi rank. I am going to my husband's workplace. It's around the corner that's why I decided to walk.

Thapelo: But you can still request uber to...

Me: I said that it's around the corner. Why do I need uber? I feel like walking.

Thapelo: Okay, please take care.

Me: Mhmm.

...

He drove away. Kaden's car pulled over next to the road as I was walking.

God, is this a joke? Who's next? Like, who's going to come to me after Kaden?

...

Me: Another one. Yes, what do you want?

...

He got out of the car and knelt down before me.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Must this guy always embarrass me? People are looking at us.

...

Me: What are you doing, Kaden? Get up.

Kaden: I am so sorry, please forgive me for everything. I mean it.

...

I know that he is serious. I know that he is sorry for everything he did. Jaden told me everything but the truth is I am not ready to forgive anyone. Can't I take my time?

...

Me: Get up, please.

Kaden: Not until you forgive me.

Me: People are staring at us. Please stop it.

...

He refused to stop. I was embarrassed so I quickly got in his car.

...

Me: I will drive your car if you don't stop what you are doing. I will leave you here. Get in the car now.

Kaden: Oh, okay.

...

He smiled and got in. I drove away.

...

Me: Why did you have to create a scene in front of everyone?

Kaden: But I was serious. I am really sorry.

Me: Fine, Kaden.

Kaden: Fine? What's that?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Kaden: Please say something.

Me: You were with Jaden yesterday, right?

Kaden: Right.

Me: You told him everything - how you became a monster and why you became a monster. He told me everything.

Kaden: He did?

Me: Yes.

Kaden: Must he always tell you everything?

Me: Yes, we are lovers and we don't want to hide anything from one another.

Kaden: I see.

Me: Are you willing to change?

Kaden: Yes, I am. The truth is I did not know that Jaden also knew everything that was happening between our parents. He should've talked to me and I also should've talked to him.

Me: You kept quiet because you didn't want to believe that your father is abusive to your mother. Jaden did the same thing. He decided to get himself distracted by always being happy and you decided to be a very heartless person.

Kaden: Yeah, you are right.

Me: Today I lost a baby because of you. Is it fair, Kaden?

Kaden: No, it's not. I am really sorry.

...

I stopped the car next to the road and looked at him.

...

Me: It hurts, Kaden. I am Twenty Years of Age and I have been through a lot. My heart is broken and I don't even know how to forget about everything that happened.

Kaden: I am really sorry.

Me: Sorry can't fix everything and you know that. You should've turned against your father not against everyone else. Your father is responsible for everything. You are a monster because of him. You should've turned against him and only him.

Kaden: That's true.

...

I started crying and shouting.

...

Me: YOU SHOULD'VE TURNED AGAINST DENIS JONES BECAUSE HE IS THE BAD ONE HERE BUT NO YOU DECIDED TO HURT EVERYONE WHO TRULY CARED ABOUT YOU. BIANCA? DO YOU KNOW WHAT YOU DID TO HER? SHE TURNED INTO A MONSTER BECAUSE OF YOU. I HAVE SEEN THE LOVE SHE HAS FOR YOU AND WHAT DID YOU GIVE HER? HEARTACHE!!! WHAT ABOUT ME? YOU KILLED MY BABY WITH MY FATHER!!!!

...

Tears rolled down his face.

...

Kaden: What do you want me to do to fix everything?

Me: KILL YOURSELF. DIE WITH THE PAIN I HAVE. CAN YOU DO THAT?

Kaden: Ye...

...

I didn't wait for him to finish speaking. I just walked out of his car. I got a call from a number I don't know.

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Me: Hello.

Caller: You didn't wait for me to answer your question.

Me: Kaden?

Caller: Yes, I destroyed your phone but you bought a new one and got a new number. I stole your number from Jaden.

Me: What do you want?

Kaden: I want to answer your question. Yes, I will kill myself and die with your pain. I am sorry for everything and I want you to be happy that's why I am dying with your pain.

Me: Wh-What?

I turned around and looked at him. He was standing next to the car with a gun pointed at his head.

Me: Ka-Ka-Kaden, No. I didn't mean what I said. I was...

Kaden: Take care of yourself. Always be happy.

The trigger was pulled.

Me: (Screams) KADEN, NO!!!

To be continued...

37

[KADEN]

Huh? Still alive? How? I pulled the trigger, didn't I? And I heard the gunshot so what?

I looked at the gun and it was on the ground.

Reba came running to me.

...

Me: How did that happen?

Rebaone: Clearly God saved you. Didn't you pull the trigger?

Me: I did.

...

Jaden appeared from nowhere.

...

Jaden: Your gun does not have bullets, you fool. The gun that made noise is mine. I aimed at your gun, that's why it's on the ground.

Rebaone: Jaden, where did you get a gun?

Me: Yes, where did you get a gun?

Jaden: Are you the only one who can use a gun, Kaden?

Me: No, that's not what I meant.

...

He slapped me.

...

Jaden: Get in the car now.

Me: Wh-what?

Rebaone: You heard him. You've created enough scene. Get in the car.

...

What? Am I a child? I got slapped and now I am being told to get in the car? Wow.

...

Jaden: Kaden, I won't repeat myself. Get in the car.

Me: Fine, mom.

...

I got in the car.

...

[REBAONE]

God, thank you for sending Jaden here just in time. Kaden was really going to commit suicide and I was never going to forgive myself. God, you are really nice. You are looking out for me, aren't you? Thank you.

...

Me: Thank you, babe. He almost died because of what I said.

Jaden: Get in the car.

Me: Huh? Which car?

Jaden: Get in my car and wait for me. I need to talk to Kaden.

Me: Are you mad at me?

Jaden: Get in the car, please.

Me: Okay.

...

I got in the car.

I hope that he's not mad at me. I didn't mean to tell Kaden to kill himself. I was angry.

...

[JADEN]

Kaden scared me so much. I have never been scared like today. I almost lost my one and only brother. I am not that heartless, I

can't allow Kaden to die. We know why he was a monster and he deserves a second chance. It's true that he also killed my baby but I can't let him die.

I picked up his gun and got in his car.

...

Me: You were selfish once again, Kaden.

Kaden: I... Well... I wanted to help Reba. That was my way of repenting.

Me: Reba did not mean what she said. She's nothing like you, Kaden. She has a heart.

Kaden: Do you know what happened?

Me: Yes, Reba was loud. I heard everything. I was in my car, across the road.

Kaden: Oh, why did you save my life?

Me: You are my brother and I love you. We don't need to be fighting amongst each other. We can go for Denis, you know? Reba is right.

Kaden: Do you really love me?

Me: Yes, I do.

Kaden: Even after everything I did?

Me: Yes, even after everything you did.

Kaden: Have you forgiven me?

Me: I... I will get there. Let's not force things.

Kaden: Okay, I understand.

Me: Go home and don't do anything stupid.

Kaden: Sure.

Me: I will see you later.

Kaden: Was it you?

Me: Who did what?

Kaden: Who stole the docket and the evidence?

Me: No, I didn't steal anything. I thought you were behind this.

Kaden: How? I was also behind bars.

Me: I thought that you sent someone to do the dirty work for you.

Kaden: No, I didn't.

Me: Fine. I believe you but who stole everything?

Kaden: I wish I knew.

Me: Well, everything is in the past. I need to get going now.

Kaden: Okay.

...

I got out of the car.

...

Kaden: Jaden?

Me: Yes?

Kaden: I love you too.

Me: Say that again?

Kaden: You heard me. Don't be dramatic.

Me: (Giggles) I didn't hear what you said. Please say it loud.

Kaden: I LOVE YOU!!!

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

I smiled and walked to my car.

...

Rebaone: Did Kaden just say that he loves you?

Me: Yes, he did.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Wow, better days are coming.

Me: (Giggles) You can say that again.

Rebaone: Well, I was coming to your workplace. Our fathers are giving money to Jackson tomorrow.

Me: I will take care of everything.

Rebaone: [I have been in this car for few minutes and there's a strange sigh that I am hearing in the car. What's going on?]

Me: Why are you quiet?

Rebaone: Who's breathing? Wh-who is sighing? Who's breathing, Jaden?

Me: Everyone who is alive.

Rebaone: Jaden, something is breathing so heavily in this car. What's going on?

...

I kept quiet and also heard something breathing so heavily.

...

Me: Babe, we are now in a horror movie. I can also hear that.

Rebaone: It's been in your car for so long.

...

We looked around in the car and couldn't find anything.

...

Me: I don't understand this.

Rebaone: Jaden, it's coming from that box.

...

She pointed at my box.

...

Me: My box? I use it for books. How can something be...

Rebaone: Open it and let's check.

Me: Fine.

...

I opened the box and saw Mimi sleeping inside.

...

Rebaone: What is it?

Me: Cute Mimi.

Rebaone: What? You have been driving around with a baby in the box? She could've suffocated and died. Why are you so careless?

Me: The box has holes. She's fine and she's fitting perfectly fine in the box.

Rebaone: Get her out, please.

Me: Should I wake her up?

Rebaone: Uhm... Uhh... I guess you can leave her. She's sleeping so peaceful.

...

I drove to my place.

...

[FEW MINUTES LATER]

[REBAONE]

Mimi woke up and joined me in the kitchen.

...

Me: Hey, Madam Box.

Mimi: (Smiles) Hey, sister.

Me: When did you get in the box?

Mimi: Brother Jay was with me in the morning and I got in the box without him noticing.

Me: Why did you do that?

Mimi: I wanted to have a ride in his car.

Me: (Smiles) You love cars, don't you?

Mimi: (Smiles) A lot. Where is brother?

Me: He went to see Mrs Khoza.

Mimi: Okay. Are we alone in the house?

Me: Yes, we are. Why are you asking?

Mimi: Do you want to play with me?

Me: Sure. What do you want us to play?

Mimi: Bury and heal.

Me: Huh? What's that?

Mimi: Write letters to your baby and tell her how much you love her and how much you miss her. Apologize to her for everything that happened and bury those letters.

Me: What if it was a boy?

Mimi: (Smiles) It was a girl, I just know it. Do what I told you to do.

...

Huh? Can it help? Well, I should try it.

...

Me: How many letters?

Mimi: As many as you want.

Me: Uhm... Okay. I'll do that.

Mimi: I have everything for you. Start writing.

Me: Okay, baby.

...

I began to write the letters. I was in tears but it felt like something that was supposed to be taken away from me was being taken away from me. I felt good. I put the letters in a small box and went outside with Mimi. I buried the box.

...

Me: I am done.

...

She smiled and wiped away my tears.

...

Mimi: You will feel amazing in no time, you will see.

Me: Who told you to tell me to write letters to my baby and bury them?

Mimi: (Smiles) An angel.

Me: Please tell me the truth.

Mimi: Brother Jay will write letters later and do exactly as you did. The two of you will be fine. The angel told me.

Me: Who is the angel?

Mimi: Don't worry, sister.

...

Who told Mimi to tell me to do all this? It's really working. The idea was amazing. I already feel better. One step at a time. I believe that I will fully recover from all this heartache.

To be continued...

38

[THE NEXT DAY]

[REBAONE]

I was at the orphanage with Kaden when Thapelo and Bridget came with Mavis and Denis to apologize to us. They knelt down before us, it was embarrassing.

...

Me: We have heard you, you may leave.

Thapelo: Baby, we know everything. Jackson was exposed a while ago and we know that you worked with Jaden and Damien to help us.

Me: Yeah, I did so...?

Thapelo: We didn't know that he was lying to us all along.

Me: Do you know why? Because you love money so much. I also know what you and your friend here did to your stupid wives. I can't believe that they are here with you after everything you have done to them. They are truly stupid.

Denis: Reb...

Kaden: Heyyy, don't even think of calling Reba. You must leave this place before I do something I'll regret.

...

I looked at Kaden and nudged him with my elbow.

Must this boy always be angry? This is not the time to fight.

...

Kaden: Ouch, must you always hit me?

Me: Kaden, not now.

Kaden: Well, I am not ready to forgive my parents and if they don't leave within two seconds, blood will be everywh...

Me: Kaden, the children are here. Stop it.

...

Mrs Khoza arrived with Jaden and took the children inside.

...

Kaden: Problem solved.

Me: Parents, please give us some time.

Kaden: Parents? Why are you calling them parents? Whose parents are they? Do they know how to nurture a child? Don't bore me.

Me: No need to attack me, Kaden. We are in this together.

Thapelo: Kaden, we are...

Kaden: No Mr, don't talk to me. I will walk away but I am only doing it for Reba. I am not scared of you or your friend, Denis. I am not stupid like your wives.

Mavis: Kaden, Jaden told us everything. He told us why you have been a monster. I am so sorry for not being a strong mother but I am willing to change.

Kaden: Change? How?

Mavis: I will divorce your father.

...

Denis looked at Mavis. He was so shocked.

...

Mavis: Why are you looking at me, Denis? Everything is your fault. You always chose money over us. Let's part ways so that you can marry the money.

Thapelo: Mavis, there's no need for this right now. We are not here to fight.

Bridget: Is she fighting? I don't think that she's fighting. She's just being honest.

...

Okay, backbone? I am loving this.

I sat down.

...

Thapelo: Bridget, what is wrong with you? Don't disrespect me in front of everyone.

Me: Disrespect? How is she disrespecting you? By finally speaking up?

Thapelo: No baby, this is not right. A wife must always respect her husband and support him. You respect and support Jaden, don't you?

Me: Do you know why I respect and support Jaden?

Thapelo: No, tell me.

Me: Well, he is always respecting me and supporting me. Respect is not just given, it's earned. It's like money. I am sure that you understand me since you love money so much.

...

He kept quiet.

...

Mavis: Kaden, honey. Please say something.

Kaden: Reba is right.

Mavis: I know that Reba is right but I am not talking about what she said.

Kaden: So what are you talking about?

Mavis: Divorcing your father.

Me: And will that change everything that happened to your children?

Mavis: No but I will get my children back and I will never leave them.

Kaden: It's not easy, Mavis. It's really not easy.

...

Kaden walked inside.

...

Thapelo: Reba, I...

Me: You killed my baby, live with that. I have nothing more to say.

Bridget: Reba, I will also divorce your father. I thought about this. I have been meeting with Thuso and I know how much I hurt my children. I thought about it all. I even talked to my lawyer about this.

...

Thapelo looked at Bridget.

...

Thapelo: You are a snake. How can you do this to me?

Bridget: How am I a snake? I am doing what's right for me, for my children and for you.

Thapelo: For me? How?

Bridget: You don't love me so I am helping you. I am setting you free.

Thapelo: I don't want to be set free.

Me: So why do you keep on insulting your wife, beating her up and going to strip clubs?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Bridget: Answer the question, Thapelo. The children are now aware of everything.

Thapelo: Did you tell them?

Bridget: No, I didn't. They are not stupid... stupid like me. They know what's right and what's wrong.

...

I laughed and looked at Bridget.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Me: Did you just call yourself stupid?

Bridget: Yes, the word stupid suits me perfectly.

Me: (Laughs) I know and I am glad that we are getting somewhere.

Thapelo: Reba, don't speak to your mother like that.

Me: Why? Why are you bothered? You don't love her, right?

Denis: He loves her.

Me: How would you know that, father in-law?

Denis: We talk about everything. He is always praising his wife when he is with me.

Me: (Laughs) What's the use? Aren't the two of you the same? You never told him to stop hurting his wife because you were also doing the same things to your wife. Friendship goals, right?

...

He kept quiet.

...

Me: I am done. I am going inside to...

...

Kaden and Jaden walked out of the orphanage's building with big guns. I was so shocked. I got up and stood before Jaden.

...

Me: Bbb-ba-babe, what's going on?

Jaden: Get out of my way.

Me: Huh? Are you killing them?

Jaden: I said get out of my way.

...

He gently pushed me aside with the back of his hand. He pointed a gun at Thapelo and Kaden pointed a gun at Denis. Resego, Mackenzie, Naledi, Damien, and Thuso appeared from literally nowhere.

...

Resego: Jaden, shoot. Kill him now.

Mackenzie: Kaden, think about everything Denis put you through and pull the trigger. He doesn't deserve to live.

...

Wait, what? Why are they cheering? Do they really want their fathers to die? I thought that they would help me talk some sense... Oh my God, this is not okay. Jaden and Kaden should stop this.

...

Me: Jay, please. You are not a murderer.

Jaden: They must die. Denis, Thapelo get up now.

...

Denis and Thapelo got up with their hands in the air.

...

Denis: Jaden and Kaden, don't do this.

Resego: No, they should kill you. You are very horr...

Me: (Shouts) RESEGO, SHUT UP. YOU ARE NOT HELPING AT ALL!!!

Resego: Well, I am not here to help. They hurt you and their wives. They should die.

Bridget: No, they don't have to die. We promised to divorce them.

Kaden: No, we don't believe you. You will always go back to them no matter what.

Mavis: We won't, we promise. Don't kill them.

Mackenzie: You are lying, you will go back to them. They must die, right Damien?

Damien: No, leave them. Don't kill them. Kaden? Jaden? Please put the guns down.

Kaden: What about your parents' house, Damien? Think about it. I was asked to send some people to do the dirty work. Denis and Thapelo are responsible for what your parents went through. Don't you remember the condition your parents were in?

Damien: I remember everything but this is not the way to go. Forgive and move on.

Jaden: Sorry D, we are not like you.

Damien: Jay, you are exactly like me. This is not you. Forgive and...

Jaden: NO!!!

...

Mavis and Bridget got up and stood before their husbands.

...

Mavis: I will take the bullet for Denis.

Bridget: And I will take the bullet for Thapelo.

Me: WHAT???

Mavis: I am serious.

Bridget: Me too.

Jaden: Fine by me.

Kaden: And fine by me.

Me: Jaden, do you really want to kill my mother? Please don't do this. She's still my mother.

Jaden: Even after everything that happened?

Me: Yes, I still love her. I will take her bullet. Kill me.

...

Jaden and Kaden put the guns down and went closer to Denis and Thapelo.

...

Jaden: Did you see what just happened? We were not going to kill you. We are not murderers. We just wanted to show you that the people you hurt more than anyone else would still stick with you at a time like this.

...

Thank you, Jesus.

...

Kaden: Your wives were willing to take bullets for you even after everything you did to them. They know and understand the meaning of love and marriage.

Jaden: You burnt down Damien's parents' house and guess what? Damien still begged us not to kill you.

Kaden: And Reba? You hurt her so much. She knows the meaning of pain all because of you but she begged us not to kill you.

...

Jaden looked at Bridget.

...

Jaden: Did you hear what your daughter said?

Bridget: (Cries) Yes, I did.

Jaden: What did she say?

Bridget: "Jaden, do you really want to kill my mother? Please don't do this. She's still my mother. Yes, I still love her. I will take her bullet. Kill me."

Jaden: It's good that you heard everything.

To be continued...

39

[A WEEK LATER]

[BIANCA]

With everything that happened, everything that I did, my mom took my car and froze my account. I don't blame her at all. She's punishing her daughter. She's doing everything that she is doing because she still love me sooooo much. But it's heavily raining, I am broke and I don't have transport to go home.

I was walking home when I saw Kaden's car pulling over next to the road but Reba was the one driving the car.

...

Rebaone: Come on. Get in. You are soaking wet.

Me: Uhm... Me?

Rebaone: I am looking at you. Get in.

Me: But I am wet, the car seats will...

Rebaone: Oh come on, this is your boyfriend's car, isn't it?

...

I kept quiet and got in the car.

Kaden Jones is no longer my boyfriend but I can't say anything to Reba because she gets along with Kaden nowadays.

...

Me: Thank you.

Rebaone: You are welcome. Take this throw and cover yourself with it.

Me: Sure. Thank you.

...

She gave me a throw and began to drive.

...

Rebaone: Bianca, are you okay?

Me: Yeah, why are you asking?

Rebaone: Why are you walking home?

Me: Well, I felt like walking.

Rebaone: In this rain? You are lying. What's going on?

Me: My mom took everything away from me. It's my punishment.

Rebaone: And what's my punishment for you?

Me: Uhm... You can do anything to me. It's really not a problem.

...

She started laughing.

...

Rebaone: Are you always like this? You are submissive, aren't you?

Me: I am repenting.

Rebaone: Repenting does not mean that you should allow everyone to step on you.

...

Me: (Cries) I know but I am just tired of fighting with everybody. My father was abusive to my mother. He was physically abusing her and verbally abusing her.

Rebaone: Really? I didn't know. What did your mom do?

Me: She always tried her best to fight back. One day she called the cops. My father was arrested only to be released the next day.

Rebaone: Are you joking? What is wrong with the law? Not helpful at all.

Me: I know but I am glad that everything is okay now. He was a horrible man.

Rebaone: Why do you keep saying "was"? Or did he change now? Is he a better man?

Me: No, he's dead and we are happy.

Rebaone: Who killed him?

Me: He was involved in a car accident early last year.

Rebaone: Oh, I see. I am so sorry for everything that you went through.

...

She stopped the car.

...

Rebaone: No one deserves to go through what you went through. Everyone deserves happiness.

Me: And I couldn't give you that.

Rebaone: Do you know why?

Me: No, tell me.

Rebaone: Because you were blinded by your love for Kaden. Most women never speak up when they are being abused. It's not okay. Women should learn to stand for themselves. They should learn to fight for what's right. You know what your mom went through, she spoke up but the law failed her. You went through the same thing, Kaden used to hit you but you failed to at least tell your mom. You should have said something, you failed your mom.

Me: I know and I feel so bad right now. I used to be strong but Kaden made me weak. He also made me heartless.

...

She gave me a handkerchief.

...

Rebaone: It's Kaden's handkerchief. I found it in the car. Use it. Take it as Kaden and abuse it. Wipe everything with it.

...

She hugged me.

God, this girl is really good hearted. I can't believe that she is comforting me after everything bad I did to her.

I wiped away "everything" with Kaden's handkerchief.

...

Rebaone: Dig in your nose with it, it's not a problem. You might feel better, you know?

...

We both laughed.

...

Me: Thank you so much, Reba. It looks like I needed someone to talk to.

Rebaone: (Smiles) It's okay. I have been keeping an eye on you and I know that you are a good person. You beg me everyday to forgive you. I have forgiven you.

Me: Really?

Rebaone: Yes, I forgive you with all my heart, my soul and all my being.

Me: Thank you so much, Reba. Thank you.

Rebaone: (Smiles) It's okay. Does Kaden really know everything about you?

Me: No. He doesn't even know that my mom was abused. He doesn't know my birthday, my age, my...

Rebaone: Hold on, are you serious?

Me: I am dead serious.

Rebaone: Wow, he is ignorant.

Me: No, he doesn't love me.

...

She kept quiet and drove the car.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Me: Why are you quiet?

Rebaone: Didn't Kaden reach out to you?

Me: He did.

Rebaone: And you didn't give him a chance to speak, right?

...

I nodded.

...

Rebaone: I finally gave you a chance to speak. Don't you think that it's time you also give Kaden a chance to speak?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Rebaone: He's all yours. We are signing the divorce papers tomorrow.

Me: Divorce papers? Didn't you say that you got married to Jaden before getting married to Kaden?

...

She looked at me, smiled and winked.

...

Rebaone: It was a lie. Damien came up with this lie to save me. Jaden and I are not married. I am legally married to Kaden and not to Jaden.

Me: But what about the photos and the documents that were provided to show that you and Jaden are really married?

Rebaone: They were fake. Documents can be faked and photos can also be faked.

Me: Wow, okay.

Rebaone: Yeah, I am going to be a free woman from tomorrow. I have been suffering for so many months. I will finally be Jaden's wife.

Me: (Smiles) Well, I am happy for you.

Rebaone: You have reached your destination.

Me: Oh, I didn't know that you know where I live.

Rebaone: I told you that I have been keeping an eye on you.

Me: Mhmm, okay my stalker.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Yeah, I am your number one stalker. Listen, please give Kaden a chance to speak. You don't have to get back with him but just hear him out. Everyone was in the wrong, babe.

Me: Okay, I will do that just for you.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Oh wow, thank you. I feel special already.

Me: (Smiles) Can I hug you?

Rebaone: Sure.

...

I hugged her.

...

Me: Thank you for everything.

Rebaone: You are welcome. Get inside. Take the throw and the handkerchief with you.

Me: Sure.

Rebaone: Take a shower and wear warm clothes when you get inside.

Me: I will do that.

Rebaone: And tell your mother that you love her and that you are sorry.

Me: No problem.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Bye.

Me: (Smiles) Bye.

...

I walked inside the yard. My mom was home and I told her all about my day and how Reba forgave me. I also apologized again and told her that I love and appreciate her.

...

[REBAONE]

I must say that I am having a good day. I just feel so good. I haven't talked to my parents ever since the "Gun Show". I had asked them to give me some space but today I am going to see them. I am ready to forgive and move on. It's not going to be easy to forget so I am just going to forgive and move on.

I arrived at their house and I was shocked to see Bridget and Mavis pointing guns at their husbands. Their husbands were chained and bleeding.

Hold on, I thought that everything was getting better. What's this now? Didn't these two women stand before their husbands a week ago and say that they will take bullets for them? Didn't they beg Kaden and Jaden not to kill their husbands? What is this?

...

Me: Mom, what is going on here?

Bridget: Reba, what are you doing here? Who let you in?

Me: This is my parents' house. I let myself in.

Bridget: Uhh... You... You were not supposed to see this.

Me: What's going on?

Bridget: They must die. They put us through a lot.

Me: But I heard that they apologized for everything and you forgave them. Why do you want to kill them now?

Mavis: It was just an act, Reba. We stole the docket and the evidence because we wanted to torture them. We wanted to do it on our own.

Did she just say that they stole the docket and the evidence? But the orphanage? Uhm... I... What happened at the orphanage was... Oh my God, Mavis and Bridget were acting. They made us believe that they didn't want anything to happen to their husbands.

Mavis: Why are you quiet, honey? Aren't you happy?

Bridget: We are doing this for you and for everyone else.

Me: With tears in your eyes? Do you really want to do this?

Bridget: (Laughs) Yes. The whiskey is strong enough to make us strong.

Me: Huh? What are you even saying? You have always hated whiskey so...

Bridget: Shhh, let us do this.

Me: No, I can't allow you to do this. Put...

Bridget: Do you know the little girl by the name Mimi?

Me: Yes, I do. Why do you have to speak about Mimi right now?

Bridget: I am also doing this for her.

Me: Why? I don't understand.

Bridget: She's my blood, she's my daughter, she's Thapelo's daughter, she's your little sister, she's Resego's little sister and she's also Thuso's little sister.

Me: What? How is she your daughter?

Bridget: Thapelo and I had sex and...

Me: Mom, that's not what I am talking about. Spare me the details, I know how babies are made.

Bridget: I had to give my daughter away because of this man. It happened four years ago

Me: (Cries) I don't understand anything. What are you saying? Please stop this nonsense. What are you really saying, mom?

To be continued...

40

[BRIDGET]

I have been quiet for so long but I can't continue to keep quiet. Mimi is my daughter and I should tell Reba the whole truth.

...

Me: Reba, I hid my pregnancy from everyone.

Rebaone: Mom, I was sixteen years of age four years ago. How is Mimi your daughter? You were never pregnant.

Me: I was pregnant, believe me baby.

Thapelo: Pregnant? Are you serious? How is...

Me: I am not talking to you, don't talk to me.

Rebaone: But I am also confused, tell me.

...

She wiped away her tears and sat down.

...

Me: Well, I went to USA for twelve months four years ago. Try to remember.

Rebaone: I remember the time you went to USA for twelve months but you were not pregnant.

Me: I was one month pregnant when I left. My pregnancy belly was not showing. I realized how mean Thapelo was to me just after I found out that I was two weeks pregnant. I didn't tell him about the pregnancy because I was scared that he might tell me to go for abortion.

Rebaone: Was he not abusive before you got pregnant?

Me: No, he wasn't. He was so loving and caring. He changed when I was two weeks pregnant. I had to save Mimi from him.

Thapelo: You didn't do a good thing. I have never asked you to terminate your pregnancy. We raised three children together. Mimi would have...

Me: Don't say my daughter's name. I will never let you harm her. I gave birth in USA and you were not there for me so please just shut up.

Rebaone: Mom, what makes you think that your husband...

Me: He's not my husband, he's dying today.

Rebaone: Why did you think that he was going to ask you to terminate the pregnancy?

Me: It was just a feeling, I mean he was very horrible to me.

Rebaone: I am really sorry for what happened to you but Mimi deserves to know the truth.

Me: She knows me. I asked her to never tell anyone that her mommy is alive.

Rebaone: What? She knows everything? Are you serious?

Me: Yes, I am serious. She knows me and I see her everyday. I breastfed her, I raised her. She knows me, baby.

Rebaone: How is everything you are saying possible?

Me: Well, do you know Alicia?

Rebaone: The one who works at the orphanage, right?

...

I nodded.

...

Rebaone: Yeah, I know her

Me: She helped me with everything. She always take Mimi to my hotel to meet me. She has been doing this for four years.

Thapelo: Do you have a hotel?

Me: I have hotels, you fool.

Rebaone: Hotels? Who are you? What else are you hiding from us?

Me: I am sorry, I didn't mean to hide any of these from you. I just didn't want to bother you. I wanted my children to do good at school.

Rebaone: By hiding our sister from us?

Thapelo: And by hiding your businesses from us? Why, honey?

...

I laughed and slapped him.

...

Me: Don't talk to me, you are nothing to me, Mr Thapelo Mogale.

Rebaone: Mom, you don't need to do this. Let everything go and just be happy. Don't kill your husband, he's...

Me: POINT OF CORRECTION, HE'S NOT MY HUSBAND!!!

Rebaone: But you are still married...

Me: He will sign the divorce papers and die. I am just waiting for the papers from my lawyer. He'll be here around 17:00.

Rebaone: [Okay, this is great. It's still 16:00, I can do something to stop this madness.]

Rebaone: This is just too much for me. I am leaving.

Me: Fine. You don't need to see this.

...

Thapelo looked at Rebaone.

...

Thapelo: Please save me, honey. I am sorry for everything. I didn't mean to...

Me: Leave my daughter alone, you've caused her enough trouble. I supported you through everything because you forced me, you were abusive and controlling. I thought that you'd change but you didn't change. You must die.

...

Rebaone stormed out of the house. She was in tears.

She will be fine. I still love Thapelo because I am stupid but he must die with my stupidity today. It's now 16:05. I will kill him at 17:05. I am doing this for me and for my children.

...

[REBAONE]

I know that mom is hurting but I can't allow her to kill her husband. She made a mistake by telling me that the divorce papers will arrive at 17:00. I still have time. I need to talk to Jaden. He must get Mimi to stop everything.

I called Jaden.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Jaden: Babe, where are you? We are all waiting for you.

Me: (Cries) I am outside my parents' house. Please bring Mimi here ASAP.

Jaden: Babe, what's going on? Why are you crying?

Me: I can't talk right now and I can't get Mimi from the orphanage. I won't make it back in time. You know how the traffic jam can be like at this time of the day. Workers are coming back from work. It's busy, please bring Mimi or ask Alicia or Mrs Khoza to bring her.

Jaden: Uhm... I am with Mimi. I'll be right there. Please calm down. You are scaring me.

Me: Come with everyone.

Jaden: Everyone?

Me: Yes, didn't you say that you are all waiting for me?

Jaden: I am with Mimi, Damien, Kaden, Resego, Thus...

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: COME WITH EVERYONE, JADEN!!!

Jaden: To your parents' house?

Me: Yes.

Jaden: Okay, I will get a bigger car. I will see you soo...

...

I hung up.

God, please help me. It's now 16:15. My mom will do something that she will regret later. Please stop her from doing this. Traffic jam? Please take care of it.

The rain continued to pour.

...

[16:30]

Still no sign of Jaden and the rain was worse. I didn't even care about the rain. I just wanted Jaden to show up.

...

[16:45]

Bridget's lawyer arrived and I didn't know what to do. I was so scared.

...

The Lawyer: Reba, hi.

Me: Hey.

The Lawyer: What are you doing out here? You'll catch a cold.

...

I should waste his time.

...

Me: (Smiles) Did you buy a new car?

The Lawyer: No, I didn't. I have been using this car for two years.

Me: Really? Do I know it?

The Lawyer: Uhm... Must you know all my cars?

Me: (Smiles) Of course not. Uhm... Well, give me the papers.

The Lawyer: What papers?

Me: Divorce papers. My mom sent me out here.

The Lawyer: But it's raining. Why would she send you out here?

Me: I love rain and she knows that. It's not a big deal.

The Lawyer: I didn't know that you love rain.

Me: (Smiles) Must you know everything about me?

The Lawyer: (Giggles) Of course not. I'll put the papers inside a waterproof envelope.

Me: Sure.

...

[16:55]

The Lawyer: I am done. Here you go. I am getting wet already. It's heavily raining.

Me: And your car seats are getting wet because you opened the window. Go home. I will take care of everything.

The Lawyer: Give the envelope to your mom before 17:00.

Me: Sure.

...

He drove away. I got rid of the waterproof envelope and made sure that the papers get wet.

...

[17:00]

Jaden arrived with everyone. He obviously forced me to get in the car. He even took off his jacket and made me wear it.

...

Jaden: What's going on?

Me: Mimi... I... He will... They will die...

Jaden: What are you saying to me?

Me: Drive, Jaden. Let's go in.

...

He drove in. We all got out of the car and went inside the house. They saw what was happening.

...

Jaden: Uhh... What's going on?

Mimi: Mommy, what are you doing?

Resego: Mommy? Cute Mimi, don't call her your mother. We forgave her but she doesn't deserve to be called mommy by anyone.

Mimi: But she's my mommy and she's not bad.

Resego: Your mommy? Didn't you tell us that your mommy is in heaven?

Mimi: (Cries) I lied. That's my mommy.

...

She pointed at Bridget. Bridget quickly put the gun down and smiled.

...

Bridget: Baby, I am just playing. I wasn't planning to kill him.

Mimi: Isn't he your mean husband?

Bridget: Uhm... Yeah, he is.

Mimi: Is he the same man who killed my daddy?

Bridget: Uhm... Uhh... I... He's your father. I lied to you about some things, baby.

Thuso: Mom, what's going on here?

...

I took the time to tell everyone what Bridget Mogale told me. They were obviously shocked.

...

Mimi: Mommy, you are not a bad person. I know you. Please don't kill my daddy. He's sorry.

Bridget: (Cries) I am playing with him. I will shoot him and he won't die. It's a game, honey.

...

Mimi went closer to Thapelo Mogale and looked straight into his eyes.

...

Mimi: You are sorry for everything, right?

Thapelo: (Cries) Yes, I am.

Mimi: My mommy taught me well. I forgive you but you will have to love me and ask God to forgive you.

Me: Mom, look at that. Please don't do this to Mimi. Forgive Thapelo Mogale and Denis Jones for everything.

To be continued...

41

[A YEAR LATER]

[REBAONE]

I am very happy that all my loved ones are okay. We have been through a lot. Last year was a very bad year especially for me but believe me when I say that I am doing good this year. I will be Twenty One in a month and I am looking forward to that day. My loved ones forgave one another and decided to just try again and be happy. Forgiveness is very important. It heals your soul and enhances your beauty. Forgive, be happy, smile and be beautiful. Forgiveness is really important. It makes you brand new and happy. My siblings and I came back home and things are different. We are happy. We were never happy in this house especially last year but this year... (Smiles) everything is fine. I can gladly call Bridget and Thapelo my parents. I am no longer married to Kaden Jones but I am engaged to Jaden Jones, the love of my life. He popped the question on New Year's Eve and I said YES!!!

Mimi walked in my room.

...

Mimi: Someone looks happy.

Me: (Smiles) I am really happy. Thank you for everything, Cute Mimi. You are truly heavenly sent.

Mimi: I loved you from the first time I saw you and I didn't know that you were also my mom's daughter but I know everything now and I am extremely happy. I always prayed for a sister like you.

Me: (Smiles) Are you here to make me cry?

Mimi: (Giggles) No, I am not here to make you cry.

Me: I love you sooooo much.

Mimi: (Smiles) I love you more. I want to tell you something.

Me: What is it?

Mimi: Do you still want to know the angel that told me to tell you to write letters to your baby and bury them?

Me: I already know that angel.

Mimi: Really, sister?

...

I smiled and nodded.

...

Mimi: Who is she?

Me: Alicia.

Mimi: Wrong.

Me: Mrs Khoza.

Mimi: Still wrong.

Me: Am I really wrong?

Mimi: Very wrong. Let me tell you the truth.

Me: Okay, go on.

Mimi: It was our mommy.

...

I kept quiet and looked at her.

...

Mimi: What?

Me: Why are you lying?

Mimi: I am not lying.

Me: I know that you love our mommy so much but you don't have to lie.

Mimi: I am not lying, sister. It was our mommy. You can ask her.

Me: (Smiles) No, it's fine. I believe you, honey.

Mimi: She's a good person and she loves you.

Me: (Smiles) I know. You are turning five years next week, are you happy?

Mimi: Will you thank mommy for what she did for you?

Me: Yeah, I will do that.

Mimi: She is having a bad day. Go talk to her.

Me: What's wrong with her?

Mimi: She's worried about your school results.

Me: Why? I am getting them tomorrow.

Mimi: Yes, I heard her talking to Resego.

Me: What did she say?

Mimi: She won't forgive herself if you get bad results. She put you through a lot last year and she's not sure that you were studying enough to get best results. That's what she said.

Uhm... Yes sister, I am happy that it's my birthday next week, I love you. Bye. Daddy is waiting for me. He's taking me to the park.

Me: But I am still...

...

She kissed my forehead and left my room.

Why is mom doing this to herself? It's true that I went through a lot last year but I know myself. My results will be good. I don't know what's wrong with my University. We are only getting our results in February because we didn't write final exams last

year. We wrote final exams in January because there were some things going on at school. How can I not pass? I had enough time to study. Mom should stop worrying, I am not going to repeat any module.

I went to my mom's room.

...

Me: Hey, mom.

Bridget: Hey honey, how are you?

Me: Are you okay? You don't look good.

Bridget: I am absolutely fine. How was school?

Me: Mom, I am only going back to school after two weeks.

Bridget: Oh... Uhm... Yeah... Of course. Third year?

Me: Third year. I don't have any time to waste. I am not waiting for Resego. It's her first year in University. She passed her Matric with flying colors and she also went through a lot last year. Thuso is also in another Grade this year and he went through a lot last year. Why do you only doubt me?

...

Tears rolled down her face.

...

Bridget: I don't doubt you. You know that Thuso and Resego did not go through what you went through. You went through the worst and I should worry about your results.

Me: It's true that I went through the worst but I trust myself and I know myself better than the way you know me. I know that I did good. Please stop worrying, you make me sad.

Bridget: I am sorry.

...

I wiped away her tears and smiled.

...

Me: Mom, I don't want us to look back. I want us to be happy. I forgave everyone who wronged me and I am happy. I am enjoying life and I have my loved ones with me. Don't cry. Everything is fine.

...

She kissed my forehead and hugged me.

...

Bridget: I trust you. I am sorry for crying.

Me: (Giggles) You are full of drama. Let's go out and just enjoy the rest of our day. Mimi went to the park with dad, Thuso is still at... Where is Thuso? School is out.

Bridget: He went to his friend's house. They are working on some project.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: And where is Resego? She was home like an hour ago.

Bridget: She left the house with Alicia's son, Delano.

...

I broke off the hug.

...

Me: What did you say?

Bridget: She left the house with...

Me: No mom, I heard you but I am shocked. Did you say that Delano is Alicia's son?

Bridget: Yes, do you know him?

Me: Yes, I do but I didn't know that he's Alicia's son.

Bridget: Well, he is.

Me: Why am I always the last one to know things in this house?

Bridget: (Laughs) Maybe it's your fault. Tell me, what's going on between Resego and Delano?

Me: They are high school sweethearts. That's all I am telling you.

Bridget: (Smiles) Fine but she better not get pregnant.

Me: You should have this conversation with her, not with me.

Bridget: Okay, no problem.

Me: Are we going out?

Bridget: Fine, let's go out. Where are we going?

Me: You will find out very soon. Just get ready.

Bridget: Okay, honey.

...

I smiled and left her room. I was shocked to find Jaden in my room.

...

Me: J-Jaden? What are you doing here?

Jaden: (Smiles) Hey to you too, future wife.

...

He came closer and kissed me.

I am always happy to see Jaden but he's too much. He can't just show up in my room anytime he wants. The lobola negotiations

are still underway and we have been asked to stop doing what Jaden came here for until we are married. Well, my dad is just looking out for me. He doesn't want me to get pregnant before I walk down the aisle, Obviously I want to look extremely good on my wedding day. Jaden is here for only one thing. He is always hungry and I don't know why.

...

Jaden: What's wrong? Why are you quiet?

Me: Dad found out that you always sneak into my room to get... Uhm... You know... Uhm... I was just not expecting you today. You said that you were not going to come because you are getting addicted.

Jaden: (Giggles) Did your dad really find out?

...

I nodded.

...

Jaden: And...?

Me: He said that we should stop doing it until we are married.

Jaden: It's more nice when we are doing it the way we have been doing it. It's like we are in high school.

Me: (Giggles) You are stupid.

Jaden: I know. That's why you love me.

Me: Jaden, we are not doing it today. I am going out with mom and you didn't tell me that you were coming.

Jaden: Do I ever tell you?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: I thought as much.

Me: (Smiles) You know what I mean though.

...

He smiled and kissed me.

...

Me: You are not fair, this is rape.

Jaden: (Laughs) Really? Walk out of the room. You are not tied up.

Me: You know that it's impossible. I want this as much as you want it.

...

I locked the door.

...

Me: Can it be your birthday already? I really want to be your wife and I can't wait.

Jaden: (Smiles) Me too.

...

We did what we both wanted to do but not for a long time because my mom began to knock on the door. I didn't open the door but I spoke to her.

...

Me: Uhh... Mom, yeah yeah, I... I will be right there.

Bridget: I am ready.

Me: I am still going to take a shower.

Bridget: What have you been doing?

Me: Uhh... I was looking for the clothes.

...

Jaden giggled.

...

Bridget: Are you with someone?

Me: No. I didn't giggle.

Bridget: Did I say that you giggled?

Me: Uhm... Sorry.

Bridget: I'll be downstairs. Hurry up.

Me: Sure.

...

I nudged Jaden with my elbow and went to the bathroom.

To be continued...

42

[THE NEXT DAY]

[NALEDI]

Life is truly something else. I still can't believe that my friend is getting married in few months but I am happy for her. I have seen the love she shares with Jaden. It's truly amazing. They make a great couple and I want them to always be happy.

...

Rebaone: I am right next to you and your head is somewhere else. What's going on?

Me: (Smiles) I am happy.

Rebaone: Are we celebrating tonight?

Me: Of course we are. We passed all our modules. We should celebrate.

Rebaone: (Smiles) That's great. Everyone is so happy that I did great even after everything I went through.

Me: And you got so many distinctions.

Rebaone: That's my other name.

Me: (Smiles) I know. Come, let's go.

Rebaone: Where are we going?

Me: Let's go to the orphanage and have fun with all the children.

Rebaone: That's a great idea but I have to be somewhere else.

Me: Where do you want to go?

Rebaone: Mom had asked me earlier to go get the costumes for the children. You know that Mimi is turning five years next week and...

Me: (Smiles) Wow, are we going to have a costume party?

Rebaone: Are you a child? Did I say something about you?

Me: Are we excluded?

Rebaone: Of course not but we are not going to dress up like the children.

Me: That's not fair. I would have loved to be Peppa.

Rebaone: Peppa the pig?

Me: Yes.

Rebaone: (Laughs) What's with you and Peppa? Grow up.

Me: I am going to be Peppa when your baby turns one.

Rebaone: My baby? Which baby?

Me: Babe, you are getting married in few months and next year you'll be pregnant.

Rebaone: (Laughs) You are very funny. I am not getting pregnant next year.

Me: Is it because you are already pregnant?

Rebaone: Of course not, I am not pregnant.

Me: How do you know? You have been very naughty with Jaden.

Rebaone: Who told you that?

Me: I have eyes. I can see.

Rebaone: Rubbish. I need to go. It's getting late.

Me: Okay, I will see you tonight.

Rebaone: Who are we inviting?

Me: Isn't it obvious?

Rebaone: (Smiles) Okay, no problem. I will tell them.

Me: Great.

Rebaone: I love you. Bye.

Me: I love you more.

...

She left.

...

[REBAONE]

I arrived at the Costume Store and I found Bongani there.

...

Me: What are you doing here?

Bongani: I work here.

Me: Since when?

Bongani: Since December.

Me: I was here with my mom last week and you were not here, Bongani.

Bongani: Well, I don't need to answer to you. You betrayed me.

Me: I betrayed you? How?

Bongani: You left me for brothers, you are heartless.

Me: Wow... You know what? I am here to collect the children's costumes. Here is the receipt.

...

I gave him the receipt.

...

Bongani: Don't you want to talk about what you did to me?

Me: Give me the costumes, I don't have all day.

Bongani: Are your parents forcing you to be Jaden's wife?

Me: No, they are not. I love Jaden.

Bongani: Does he love you?

Me: Yes, he loves me.

Bongani: (Laughs) Are you sure?

Me: I am very sure.

Bongani: You are still very naive and stupid. Jaden is cheating on you with my friend:

Me: Who is your friend?

Bongani: Jess. She's working for Jaden. She's Jaden's new personal assistant. She tells me everything. They go to nice places together.

...

I kept quiet. I wanted to cry.

I trust Jaden but no woman wants to hear this about their men.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Bongani: Why are you quiet?

Me: I don't believe you. You want to ruin my life. You want to destroy my relationship with Jaden. It's not going to work.

Bongani: Jess and Jaden are sleeping together. Jess told me everything.

Me: I don't believe you. Jaden is always with me.

Bongani: Is he really always with you? How possible is that? You don't live together and you don't work together. Are you always with him?

Me: Give me the costumes, I need to go.

Bongani: You have to belie...

Me: (Yells) GIVE ME THE COSTUMES!!!

Bongani: Fine, no need to yell. People are staring at us.

...

He gave me the costumes and winked at me.

...

Me: Go to hell.

Bongani: Your marriage is not going to work out. Leave Jaden before it's too late. You are still young. You will be Twenty One in a month. Do you really want to get married at such a young age?

Me: Stay away from me. You are poisonous. Stay the hell away from me or I'll have my father to deal with you. Don't forget what he once did to you. He is now my best friend and he would do absolutely anything for me.

Bongani: Are you threatening me?

Me: Yes, I am. What will you do?

Bongani: (Giggles) You are this angry because you believe that Jaden is cheating on you.

Me: Go to hell.

...

I left the shop and went straight to Jaden's workplace. I was fuming. I found Jess in Jaden's office and she was too close to my man. Jaden got up.

...

Jaden: Oh, hey ba...

...

I gave Jess a hot slap.

...

Jaden: Rebaone, why did you do that?

Me: (Shouts) HOW DARE SHE?

Jess: What have I done?

Me: DO YOU KNOW BONGANI? HE'S YOUR FRIEND, RIGHT?

Jaden: Honey, what's going on?

...

I slapped Jaden.

...

Me: DON'T TALK TO ME, JADEN. YOU ALLOWED A SNAKE INTO YOUR LIFE. HOW DARE YOU???

Jaden: Jess is a good person. Lower your voice. How can you do this here? This is humiliating.

Me: (Cries) YOU ARE MAKING ME CRY IN FRONT OF ANOTHER GIRL. ARE YOU SLEEPING WITH HER?

Jaden: Rebaone,...

Me: LEAVE ME ALONE. THE WEDDING IS OFF. YOU CAN MARRY JESS!!!!

...

I felt weird. My head started spinning. I vomited on the floor and sat down on Jaden's chair. Guess what? I started feeling embarrassed for what I did.

...

Jaden: You are obviously not okay. What happened?

...

Reba, what have you done? You embarrassed your future husband in front of his assistant and you were also yelling like a crazy woman. The entire world heard you. Oh my God.

...

Jess: Sir, I will give you some time alone with your wife

Jaden: Okay, thank you and I am sorry for what she did to you.

Jess: Let's blame the pregnancy. It's okay. I won't hold grudges.

Jaden: Pregnancy?

Jess: Yes, sir. She's pregnant.

...

She walked out of the office.

Is she stupid? Who is pregnant? What does she know about me?

Jaden looked at me.

...

Jaden: Are you pregnant?

Me: Look, I am sorry for what I did. I don't know what got into me. Bongani poisoned me. I am sorry, baby.

Jaden: What's your business with Bongani?

...

I told him that I found Bongani at the Costume Store and that Bongani could not stop talking rubbish. I told Jaden everything.

...

Jaden: I am not cheating on you, I swear to God.

Me: I am sorry. I won't do this again.

Jaden: Are you pregnant?

Me: Do I look pregnant?

Jaden: Uhm...

Me: I am not pregnant. I will mop the floor. Just sit down and...

...

I fainted.

To be continued...

43

[JADEN]

Okay, am I dreaming or am I going crazy? What just happened here? Reba fell off the chair just like that. Did she... Did she faint?

I went closer to her and realized that I wasn't dreaming or going crazy. I rushed her to the hospital.

It's true that this girl embarrassed me for nothing but what can I do? I still love her and I still want to marry her. She called off the wedding but I know that she didn't mean it.

I told all her loved ones that she fainted and that I had to rush her to the hospital.

...

[AT THE HOSPITAL]

Bridget: Son, what happened to Reba?

Me: Everything happened so fast, it felt surreal.

Bridget: How did she faint? What happened to her?

Thapelo: She was fine in the morning.

Resego: No, she wasn't. She wasn't feeling well in the morning. She told me that she ate something that got her sick.

Thapelo: Why didn't she tell us?

Resego: You made breakfast for us today and you wanted to make us happy. Reba did not like the breakfast you made but she didn't tell you because she didn't want to hurt your feelings. She started vomiting after eating the breakfast you made.

Thapelo: Oh my God, what have I done?

Bridget: It's okay honey, you can't blame yourself. Reba is going to be fine.

Resego: What I don't understand is that she suddenly hated what we ate this morning. Wasn't it her favorite breakfast?

Bridget: It was. I am also shocked.

Thapelo: Maybe I didn't cook it the right way.

Me: Or maybe she's pregnant.

Bridget: Couldn't you stay away from her until the wedding? She already bought a wedding dress, if she's really pregnant then...

Me: (Smiles) Then I am going to be a father.

Bridget: No silly, the dress won't fit her.

Me: Oh... Are you really worried about the dress? We will take care of everything. I really want a baby.

Denis: You do?

Me: Yes dad, I do. I am old enough to be a father. I am turning Twenty Five on my wedding day.

Mavis: (Smiles) I think that you will be a great father. I don't doubt you at all. I hope and pray that Reba is pregnant.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, mom. You are the best. Let me tell you what happened in my office.

Mavis: Tell me.

...

I told my mom what Reba did before fainting.

...

Mavis: (Smiles) Bridget, do you get what Jaden just said?

Bridget: (Laughs) Oh shut up, Mavis.

Kaden: What happened? Tell us.

Bridget: No, don't tell them, Mavis.

Me: Please tell us.

Mackenzie: We would like to know.

...

Reba's father laughed and looked at my father.

...

Me: What's going on?

Denis: (Laughs) Son, you are right. Your future wife is pregnant.

Thapelo: Yes, she is. She's 100% pregnant.

Kaden: Why do you say that?

Thapelo: Should I tell them or will you tell them, honey?

...

He looked at Bridget.

...

Bridget: Fine. I'll tell them.

Mavis: Yes, tell them.

Bridget: Well, Jaden... (Giggles) The same thing that happened with you and Reba happened with my husband and I when I was carrying Reba. I didn't know that I was pregnant. I went to Thapelo's workplace and just started yelling at everyone. What Reba did was nothing compared to what I did back in the years. Thapelo walked out of his office with your father and tried to calm me down but failed. Mavis was with me. We have always been friends. Believe me when I say that I slapped her just for trying to touch me. I vomited... Few minutes later and regretted everything I did. I couldn't even look at anyone. I tried to leave

on my own and fainted. Thapelo, Denis and Mavis took me to the hospital and guess what?

Me: You were told that you were pregnant?

...

She nodded.

...

Naledi: Wow, Reba got the fire from you. Aunt, you are too much.

...

The doctor came to us.

...

Me: Doctor, how is Reba?

Naledi: Is everything okay, doctor?

Doctor: (Smiles) Yes, everything is fine.

Me: Is she pregnant?

Doctor: (Smiles) Yes, she's pregnant. She's four weeks pregnant. Congratulations.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

Everyone congratulated me and I felt so great.

The woman I love is pregnant and we are going to get married.
Of course I am over the moon.

...

Thapelo: Doctor, is my daughter awake?

Doctor: Yes, she is.

Thapelo: Can we see her?

Doctor: Yes, no problem.

Thapelo: (Smiles) Thank you.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

We all went to see Reba. She couldn't stop smiling. The doctor shared the good news with her before sharing with us.

...

[A WEEK LATER]

[REBAONE]

I am happy that I am pregnant but I am also scared. I had a miscarriage before and fear is attacking me now that I am pregnant again. My mom told me that it's normal for a

pregnant woman to think about miscarriage but the truth is I don't want to think about it. It can't be normal.

Mimi walked in my room.

...

Me: Do you ever knock?

Mimi: (Smiles) Sometimes. I am sorry. This is for you, take it.

...

She gave me a glass of weird juice.

...

Me: Uhm... What's this?

Mimi: It's juice.

Me: What kind of juice is this? It doesn't look good.

Mimi: I don't know. Your mommy in-law made it for you. She said that it's good for you and the baby.

Me: (Smiles) Is Mrs Jones here?

Mimi: Yeah, she's here.

...

Oh, this means that Jay is also here. I missed him so much. I haven't seen him for two days.

...

Mimi: What are you thinking about?

Me: Is Jay here?

Mimi: Bianca and Kaden.

Me: Huh?

Mimi: Bianca and Kaden are here. Mackenzie, Resego, Ms Alicia, Damien, Nale...

Me: Cute Mimi, I asked about Jaden.

Mimi: (Smiles) Do something for me then I'll answer your question.

Me: Anything. What do you want?

Mimi: Go to the park with me today.

Me: Must you always go to the park after creche? Go with your father.

Mimi: Okay, bye.

...

She began to walk away but she was walking slow because she wanted me to stop her.

...

Me: Okay, I am sorry. I will go to the park with you.

Mimi: Do you promise?

Me: Yeah, I promise.

Mimi: Okay, brother Jay is also here but he's helping daddy with something.

Me: He didn't miss me at all that's why he doesn't want to come up here.

Mimi: Let's go to the park.

Me: Please do something for me.

Mimi: What is it?

Me: Please tell everyone that I am having stomach cramps.

Mimi: (Smiles) You are very silly. I know what you are up to. Okay, I will do something for you but you know that you and brother Jay are not supposed to see one another for two weeks.

Me: Please help me. I know that daddy's tradition is not allowing us to meet for two weeks but I really miss Jaden.

Mimi: Okay, leave everything to me but I won't lie about stomach cramps.

...

She walked out of the room.

Truly speaking I don't understand why I am not supposed to see Jaden for two weeks. I know that traditions are different but this one is torturing me. I miss my future husband. We are not supposed to see one another for two weeks and it has only been two days. It's too much.

Mimi walked in with Jaden.

Jaden: (Smiles) Hey babe.

Me: (Smiles) Hey, how are you?

He hugged me and kissed me.

Jaden: Your father's punishment is too much. It's killing me.

Me: I don't know if it's his tradition or if he's really punishing us but yeah, it's too much.

Mimi: Be fast. They might notice that brother Jay is here.

Me: What are they busy with?

Jaden: The men are slaughtering a goat and the women are cooking in the kitchen.

Me: What's the occasion? Cute Mimi's birthday is tomorrow and everything is under control.

Jaden: Well, this is not about Cute Mimi but us. The lobola negotiations were finalized early today so the two families are

just happy, they want to have a feast together and celebrate our love with us.

Me: Goat? I don't eat goat.

Jaden: Relax. Everything is under control. You will have anything you want. Congratulations to you, you are really getting married in three months and our parents are supporting us. Nobody is forcing you to get married, baby. Everyone is happy.

Tears of joy fell off my eyes as I hugged Jaden.

Me: I love you.

Jaden: I love you more, baby. I pray to God that he keeps us together forever.

Me: Me too. Go before they see you with me.

He kissed me, wiped away my tears and left with Mimi.

God, thank you for everything. I never thought that I'd be this happy in life. You didn't forsake me. You have always remembered me. Thank you and please keep my family together, forever.

To be continued...

44

[Some Weeks Later]

[BRIDGET]

Mimi's birthday was amazing and I am soooo happy. I have always loved my children so much and I always wanted Mimi to be known by everyone. I am happy that I don't have to hide my baby girl anymore. She's so beautiful and happy. Reba's birthday is in a week and I can't wait for her to see her gift. Her gift is very beautiful just like her. I know that she is going to love it. She has always wanted it. She will be over the moon.

Bianca walked in.

...

Bianca: Hey aunt, did you get my message?

Me: Hey honey, what message?

Bianca: Reba and Jaden left town. They asked me to tell you.

Me: Are you serious?

Bianca: Yes, I am serious.

Me: Where did they go?

Bianca: They went to Sun City in Ruste...

Me: I know where Sun City is but I asked you to take care of Reba. You know that Mackenzie and Naledi are busy with the wedding preparations and Reba's birthday preparations. You are the only one I trust to do a good job when it comes to taking care of Reba.

Bianca: Jaden took Reba, what could I have done, aunt? They are now allowed to see one another.

Me: But Reba is now two months pregnant, she need females around her.

Bianca: I know but her husband to be is a good man. He will take care of her.

Me: You know that I am the only one who can calm Reba down when she starts thinking about miscarriage.

Bianca: I know but don't worry, she is going to be fine. Let's be honest. You won't be living with Reba after she is married

...

I kept quiet.

...

Bianca: Do you get what I am trying to say?

Me: Yes, I do. Well, you are right. I should stop worrying.

Bianca: (Smiles) That's good.

Me: Where is your mom? Is she going to come?

Bianca: Yes, she will come here later. Didn't you speak to her?

Me: I couldn't talk to her. I have been very busy, I don't even know where my phone is.

Bianca: Mhmm, I have realized.

Me: I should go to Mimi's preschool to...

Bianca: Mimi is coming with Ms Alicia. You don't have to worry about anything. We are all here for you. We are going to help you with everything.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, baby. How was school?

Bianca: Third year is great and I have the best lecturers. School was great.

Me: Don't forget to keep an eye on Resego, it's her first year in University and I don't want her to get carried away and lose herself.

Bianca: Well, she hang around with her high school friends, Luyanda and Delano. I don't think that she'd do anything stupid. She is focused.

Me: (Smiles) Well, that makes me happy. Is Bongani still bothering Reba?

Bianca: Yes, aunt but Katleho and Kaden put him in his place.

Me: Katleho? Who is that?

Bianca: Katleho Koetle, Mackenzie's boyfriend.

Me: (Smiles) Oh, you should have said KK. We call him KK. Did you say that he put Bongani in his place with Kaden?

...

She smiled and nodded.

...

Me: (Giggles) Who would've thought that Kaden would ever get along with anyone?

Bianca: (Laughs) I know exactly what you are saying, aunt.

Me: God is great, isn't he?

Bianca: Too great. Kaden is such a loving man. He treats me sooooo good, aunt. He's amazing.

Me: (Smiles) I am so happy for you, baby. Everyone deserves to be happy.

Bianca: (Smiles) Thank you, aunt. Let's watch a movie I told you about.

Me: That's a good idea.

...

[THE NEXT DAY]

[REBAONE]

Sun City is obviously amazing. I can never get enough of it. I have been here so many times but I have never been here with my boyfriend aka my future husband so it's amazing to be here with him.

...

Jaden: Babe, have you seen my watch?

Me: No.

Jaden: What's wrong? Why are you looking at me like that?

Me: Jess wants you.

Jaden: Excuse me?

Me: You heard me.

Jaden: I know but we have been through this before so...

Me: Did you say that you know?

Jaden: Yes, I know. I am not blind.

Me: So why did you treat me like a fool for so long? You always told me that I was crazy. What changed?

Jaden: I am sorry for everything but I found out that you were always right.

Me: When and how?

Jaden: Two days back. I overheard her conversation with someone on the phone. She said everything. I am sorry, babe.

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: I am...

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Now I know why you brought me here. You brought me here because you wanted to apologize. You were never going to bring me here if...

Jaden: No, that's not true. I have always wanted to come here with you that's why I asked you for your timetable the day you went back to school.

Me: Okay, I believe you. What are you going to do with Jess?

Jaden: I will just stay away from her, I won't...

Me: You must get rid of her.

Jaden: I am not a murderer. How can I just kill her for wanting me?

...

I laughed.

...

Jaden: It's not funny, babe.

Me: It is. Did I ask you to kill her? Fire her.

Jaden: I can't, it's not in me to just fire someone.

Me: You will be responsible for what happens to her. Believe me.

Jaden: What do you mean?

Me: (Smiles) Nothing. It's Friday, let's start our adventure. Shall we?

Jaden: Sure but I can't go anywhere without my watch.

Me: Your watch is in the bathroom, Jaden. You left it there.

Jaden: Why didn't you tell me when I asked you about it?

Me: Because I wanted to talk to you about Jess.

Jaden: Are we fine?

Me: Yeah, absolutely. I forgive you for calling me crazy.

Jaden: (Smiles) Thank you. I'll get my watch and be right back.

Me: Okay babe, let's have a good time in Sun City. We only have today, Saturday and we are going back to Johannesburg on Sunday.

Jaden: True.

...

He kissed my forehead and went to the bathroom.

...

[REBAONE'S BIRTHDAY]

[JESS]

I was working late when Rebaone showed up at work. She didn't look happy. She was looking like someone who wanted to kill me.

...

Me: Hey, Reba. What are you doing here? Isn't it your birthday?

Rebaone: What do you want?

Me: What do you mean?

Rebaone: Jaden Jones is mine. You have to stay away from him. Your plan with Bongani will not work. You have to leave or else...

Me: (Laughs) Or else what? I could kill you right now and nobody will know. It's true that I want your man but he doesn't know and he will never believe you.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Are you sure?

Me: Yes, I am sure. Did you check the time? It's 20:00, you shouldn't be here.

Rebaone: I am not scared of you. I am not scared of anyone that's why I walked out of my party.

Me: You should be scared of me. I always get what I want.

Rebaone: Why do you want Jaden?

Me: He's rich and he's a good man. Don't you want to share? Do you want to have all the good things to yourself?

Rebaone: Jess, you don't know me. How can you just want my life? Do you know what I have been through?

Me: I don't care. I love how Jaden is treating you and I also...

...

She slapped me.

...

Rebaone: HOW DARE YOU???

Me: AND HOW DARE YOU SLAP ME AGAIN? NO ONE IS HERE TO HELP YOU. I WILL BEAT YOU UP UNTIL YOU LOSE YOUR BABY!!!!

...

She slapped me again.

...

Rebaone: DON'T EVER TALK ABOUT MY BABY AGAIN. DID YOU THINK THAT I WOULD NOT FIND OUT THAT YOU ARE JACKSON'S DAUGHTER? YOU ARE HERE FOR REVENGE, AREN'T YOU?

...

I kept quiet. Tears rolled down my face. I couldn't hold them anymore.

...

Rebaone: I HAVE ALWAYS WONDERED WHY YOU CAME INTO MY MAN'S LIFE. YOU ARE A SNAKE. I KNOW THAT YOU ARE CARRYING BONGANI'S CHILD AND YOU WERE PLANNING TO SLEEP WITH MY MAN AND LIE ABOUT THE BABY. I KNOW EVERYTHING AND I WILL MAKE YOU PAY!!!!

Me: (Laughs) Yes, you know everything detective Mogale and there's nothing you can do. I will kill you right now and get rid of your body.

...

I took out a gun and pointed it at her but I was shocked when she laughed at me.

...

Rebaone: I am not scared of you. Shoot.

Me: I will shoot. I need to do this for my father and for me.

Rebaone: Okay, go ahead.

...

I pulled the trigger but nothing happened.

...

Rebaone: (Laughs) I took out all the bullets earlier today. I know that you were planning to kill me on my birthday. You were going to attend my birthday party at 20:30 and kill me, right? I know everything and I have always known everything about you, honey. You have been stealing the company's money. I know everything. How do you feel? You are not staying in our lives for a long time. This is just a short story and the truth is I am into long stories, not short stories. It's your fault. You are very stupid and you took me for a fool. You are going to jail for attempted murder and for fraud. Hi, bye - That's how short you were in our lives. You suck.

...

The cops walked in and I was speechless.

How did Reba win? I feel like a fool. Wow, she knew everything about me and kept quiet. I am sure that she only found out everything like last week. She was always in the dark and I believed that she was a fool but... She played her cards right. Wow, I am really going down and it's soon. I am disappointed in myself.

To be continued...

45

[REBAONE]

I am happy that everything is finally fine. Jess is out of our lives and she will never be anywhere close my man again. She is Jackson's daughter and Mrs Khoza never knew anything about her. Mrs Khoza was truly married to a liar. Jackson Khoza is a true liar. He's just too much for my liking.

I arrived at my party and told everyone what really went down. And who was shocked? Jaden Jones!!! My "soft" husband to be. He didn't even know that Jess was stealing the company's money. Isn't my future husband too nice and too soft?

...

Mavis: Thank you for everything, Reba. I know that my son is with the right woman. I have seen how much you love him. You are truly the best.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. Forget about everything. Jaden just made a mistake and I am sure that he won't repeat it again.

Jaden: But I didn't know that things would get to this.

Me: You refused to fire her but I have dealt with her. I told you that you will be responsible for what happens to her. I made sure that I expose her and she's arrested. How do you feel now? Aren't you feeling sorry for her?

Jaden: Of course not. How can I feel sorry for her after everything she did? I don't care about her.

Me: I will never know.

Jaden: What do you mean?

Me: You had a soft spot for her and you refused to fire her. Maybe it's because you wanted to be with her and not with me.

Mavis: No Reba, Jaden can never do something like that to you.

Me: Why not? Is he perfect?

Mavis: No, he's not but...

Me: But nothing, mother. I am going to sleep.

Bridget: Honey, please don't overreact. Jaden loves you and...

Me: And he's too soft, I don't want such a man. He gets fooled easily. I am not feeling this party anymore, I am going to bed.

Bridget: But you just came back and you didn't open your gifts. I bought you something that you have always wanted. Please open the gifts.

Me: Tell your future son in-law, Jaden to open them. I am not interested. Sorry.

Jaden: Honey, how can I open your gifts? I am sorry for everything. Please don't go to bed.

...

I walked away and I was so emotional. Mimi came to my bedroom.

...

Mimi: Hey, beautiful.

Me: Hey, cutie.

Mimi: You are allowed to be angry and sad, it's okay. I love you.

...

Tears rolled down my face.

...

Me: (Smiles) I love you more.

Mimi: Brother Jay also loves you a lot, do you know that?

...

I nodded. She wiped away my tears and kissed my forehead.

...

Mimi: Do you really know that?

Me: Yes, I do. Why are you asking me that question?

Mimi: I don't want you to be mad at him for too long, you will be making the enemy happy. My mommy always told me to forgive and just be happy.

Me: (Smiles) Why did your mommy teach you things that she never taught me?

Mimi: Because you are old.

Me: (Laughs) Was I born old?

Mimi: (Giggles) I don't know. I have never seen you when you were a baby.

Me: How could you have seen me? I am older than you.

Mimi: Mhmm, I still never saw you when you were five years like me.

...

I laughed.

This girl is just a blessing to this family. How can I still be emotional after listening to her sweet voice?

...

Me: Should I show you photos?

Mimi: Do you have them?

Me: Yes, I do.

Mimi: (Smiles) I will check out your photos only if you promise me something.

Me: Okay, what do you want?

Mimi: Promise to go back to the party with me and open your gifts.

...

How can I refuse? She's just a sweetheart. It's not easy to say no to her.

...

Me: (Smiles) Okay, I promise.

Mimi: (Smiles) Okay, cutie. Let's see your photos.

Me: Okay, cutie. Let me get my photo album.

...

I got my photo album and showed her my photos.

...

Mimi: (Giggles) You used to look like me.

Me: (Smiles) Really?

Mimi: Yes, soooo beautiful.

Me: Are you beautiful?

Mimi: I am very beautiful. My mommy told me that I should always believe that I am beautiful. She said that I shouldn't wait for someone to tell me that I am beautiful.

Me: (Smiles) Your mommy taught you very well. She's right, you should never look down on yourself.

Mimi: (Smiles) Sister, I will look like you one day when I am... Uhhh... How old are you today?

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: I am Twenty One Years Old today.

Mimi: Yes, I will look like you when I am Twenty One. You are very beautiful and I love your smile.

Me: (Giggles) Thank you. You have seen my photos, let's go back to the party.

Mimi: (Smiles) Really?

Me: Yes, baby.

Mimi: Okay, let's go.

...

She held my hand, and we left together. Everyone was happy that I joined the party again. I opened the gifts and I loved all of them but my mom's one was the best. It stood out. She bought

me a car that I always wanted. How great? I thought that inside the small box was the earrings or a necklace but I was shocked when I saw a car key. How amazing?

The night went on and I decided to talk to Jaden in the garden. I found him in the garden and he was not okay at all.

...

Me: Hi.

Jaden: Hey.

Me: What are you doing out here?

Jaden: Uhm... I just wanted some fresh air.

...

I sat down next to him.

...

Me: I know that you love me. I am sorry for what I said. I didn't mean to hurt you.

Jaden: No, everything is fine.

Me: You look sad.

Jaden: I am sad because I didn't know Jess' plans. I feel like a fool. I knew that she wanted me but I didn't know that she was stealing the company's money and she was also planning to kill

you. I should've known, I was always with her. She was my personal assistant.

Me: Who said that you should know everything? You are not perfect and no one is perfect. Please don't be sad.

Jaden: But you know what I am talking about.

Me: I am not mad at you and I don't want to see you like this, you are breaking my heart and our baby's heart.

Jaden: I am very soft, I failed you and our unborn baby. I should do something about my softness.

Me: You don't need to change yourself. I love you the way you are. I am sorry for everything but please be careful next time. I don't want people to take advantage of your kindness.

Jaden: Okay, I can do that.

Me: I love you so much, we love you so much.

Jaden: (Smiles) I love you too.

...

I sat on his laps and kissed his cheek.

...

Me: Are we fine?

Jaden: We are fine, honey. Thank you for everything. You exposed Jess and made sure that she goes to jail.

Me: She's pregnant, I feel sorry for her... Uhm... A little.

Jaden: We should both stop being too soft. People will take advantage of us.

Me: (Smiles) Okay, baby. I agree with you.

Jaden: I love you so much, Reba.

Me: I love you more, Jay aka Mr Killer.

Jaden: (Laughs) Shut up.

...

We shared a very passionate kiss and went back to the party.

...

[MONTHS LATER]

[THE WEDDING DAY - JADEN'S BIRTHDAY]

[JADEN]

It's my wedding day and my wife to be is not feeling well at all. I am so stressed. I want to marry Reba today, on my birthday.

Kaden walked in.

...

Kaden: Hey, Jay. Wow, you look so great.

Me: Thank you. You also look good.

Kaden: I am your best man, I should look good. Well, thank you.

Me: Where is Damien? He's also my best man and he should be here with me. I am stressed.

Kaden: What's stressing you?

Me: I was told that Reba is not doing well. She is now four months pregnant and the dress she always wanted does not fit her. They got her other dresses and she still doesn't want to wear them.

Kaden: (Smiles) You love her, don't you?

Me: Of course I do. She's a great person and she loves me.

Kaden: I am here to tell you that everything is fine. I saw Reba and she's ready to walk down the aisle. She is wearing a very nice dress and she chose it herself. Nobody chose it for her and nobody forced her to wear it. She is also feeling okay, she's no longer sick.

Me: (Smiles) Are you serious?

Kaden: (Smiles) I am very serious.

Me: Okay.

Kaden: Congratulations, brother. You are marrying the best woman today. May you always be happy.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you so much, brother.

Kaden: Happy birthday to you, my dear brother.

Me: Happy birthday to you, my dear brother.

...

We shared a hug.

I am soooooo happy. I am finally marrying Reba today and the truth is I can't wait.

To be continued...

46

[FEW DAYS LATER]

[REBAONE]

I still can't believe that I couldn't go to honeymoon because of school. Believe me when I say that my parents and my in-laws are happy. They never wanted me to go to honeymoon whilst I'm pregnant. Crazy, right? I mean I am not sick, I am just pregnant and I have a husband now. He can take good care of me.

Well, I must say that my wedding was so great. Everyone had fun and the entire neighborhood can not stop talking about it. My loved ones made me very happy but I wouldve loved to go away immediately after the wedding.

We have the best parents. Jaden and I are really happy. Who ever thought that we'd be happy with our parents? God is amazing, isn't he? Our parents gave us the best gift on our wedding day. They bought us a very beautiful house and we love it. My wedding day was the best, we also celebrated my husband's and my husband's brother's birthday on my wedding day. How great is that?

Kaden and Bianca are happy and you can tell that Kaden is a good man by just looking at Bianca. Bianca was never this happy last year but everything is fine now.

Naledi and Damien are in a relationship, believe me when I say that I saw it coming. I am not that blind. I am happy, I am really happy for my best friend, she got a very nice guy for herself. Damien is great for her. I can never forget how Damien helped me last year and how he got hurt all because of me. He's really a good person just like my husband, Jaden Jones.

Thuso? Oh... My little brother is really amazing and trust me when I say that he will be a good man, a good husband, and a good father... Well, one day is one day. Thuso's intelligence will take him to places.

Resego and Delano are still together. This is really nice. I pray that they get married one day. They are great together.

Mackenzie and her boyfriend, KK are also still together and they are still happy. I can hear wedding bells already. Katleho Koetle is a genuine guy.

My parents??? (Giggles) Oh wow, they are amazing. I never thought that I'd sit here and laugh about some things that happened last year. I still remember how mom wanted to kill dad. I was very scared but look at me now. I am laughing.

Jaden's parents are also working on their relationship. I feel like sometimes you need to befriend a good person in order to always be on the right path. Denis and Thapelo used to be monsters and they were also bad to their wives. They were

both evil but they are good men again. Yes, they used to be good men until they became greedy but they are back to being good again. Awesome, right?

Everyone is just happy but Mimi is the happiest of them all. She is happy that she's not hidden from anyone and she's happy that everyone loves her. Do you know what makes her more happy? (Smiles) Uhm... The fact that her father loves her so much. Mom was wrong to hide Mimi from all of us but she was also right. We all understand why she did what she did. At least she never abandoned Mimi. She saw her everyday and raised her. Mimi is the way she is today because of Bridget Mogale. The woman I used to insult, the woman Resego used to insult. Isn't she a great mom? She knows how to fight for her family, she just did it differently. She is a great mom, a great wife, a great friend, and a great grandma. She is not stupid like Resego and I said she was. I love her soooo much.

She walked in my room. I rushed to her and hugged her.

...

Me: I love you sooooo much, mom. Please forgive me for everything bad I said to you last year.

Bridget: Really? Are we going back to last year, Reba?

Me: I am sorry.

Bridget: It's okay, we are okay.

...

I broke off the hug and looked at her.

...

Me: I have been thinking about everyone.

Bridget: I can tell.

Me: Everyone is happy, have you noticed?

Bridget: (Smiles) Yes, I have noticed. Let's sit down.

...

We sat down on the couch.

...

Me: Mom, my husband is not happy that I have been here for two days. I want to go back to him today. I don't have classes and I want him to find me at home.

Bridget: But you had to come here because he was busy with work. You needed someone to take care of you.

Me: I know but Jaden took care of everything at work. He got all the money he lost,

Bridget: (Smiles) Really?

Me: Yes, mom. He won't be busy anymore. He even asked his father to help him with things at work. He won't be going to work until I give birth.

Bridget: That's great. He's a good husband.

Me: (Smiles) Yes, he is. So should I go back to my house?

Bridget: No, he will come here for you.

Me: Okay, I will tell him what you said. Thank you, mom.

Bridget: (Smiles) You are welcome, honey. Well, I brought you juice. Mavis gave me the...

Me: Mom, why? You know that I don't like this juice so how can you allow my mother in-law to teach you how to make it? What's mixed together? I don't like it. Do you know that she also taught Jaden how to make it?

Bridget: (Laughs) Mavis is doing what's good for you and for the baby. Didn't this juice help you when you were sick on your wedding day?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Bridget: Won't you answer the question?

Me: Yes mom, it helped me when I was sick on my wedding day.

Bridget: Good. Have it and drink all of it.

Me: Fine.

...

I drank the juice. It tasted horrible as always.

...

Bridget: That's good. I am happy that you finished it.

Me: Mhmm.

Bridget: Tell me, do you love your new house?

Me: (Smiles) Yes, I do. It's beautiful. The twins will sleep in the bedroom that's next to the main bedroom and...

Bridget: The twins? Are you carrying twins?

Me: I don't know.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Bridget: Huh?

Me: I don't know.

Bridget: How can you not know? You just talked about the twins and you always go for a scan. Haven't you seen anything?

Me: Mom, it's true that I always go to a check up with my husband but the other truth is that we asked the doctor not to show us anything. We just listen. The doctor knows everything and she will tell us when the time is right. We don't want to know right now.

Bridget: So how do you know that you might be carrying twins?

Me: It's just a feeling, mom. I am carrying twins.

...

She looked at my tummy.

...

Bridget: Uhm... You are probably right.

Me: Why do you say that?

Bridget: (Smiles) You made me curious. I should talk to your doctor, I want to know what's going on.

Me: That would be cheating. Don't do that, mom. The doctor will tell us when the time is right.

Bridget: Fine, let me massage your feet.

Me: Promise me that you won't talk to the doctor?

Bridget: I promise. It's not even like the doctor will tell me something.

Me: (Smiles) Good. My feet are all yours.

...

[BRIDGET]

God, thank you for everything. You are truly a merciful God. We have seen your love. Thank you so much. My daughter fell asleep while I was massaging her feet and I am happy that she doesn't mind me touching her. My children wanted nothing to do with me last year and I never even hugged them. Things are different this year. Look at how Reba is sleeping. She is at peace and she is happy.

I tucked her in bed and left her room. I bumped into Mimi just outside Reba's room.

...

Mimi: Hello, mommy.

Me: (Smiles) Hey darling, how was creche?

Mimi: It was very nice but I am tired. I want to sleep.

Me: Don't you want anything to eat?

Mimi: No mommy, I came with brother Jay and he bought me something to eat on our way back home.

Me: Br-brother Jay?

Mimi: Yes, he's in the living room. He's here for sister Reba.

Me: Uhm... Go to sleep next to sister Reba but don't wake her up. She just fell asleep.

Mimi: Okay, mommy.

Me: I love you, baby.

Mimi: I know, mommy.

Me: Aren't you going to say it back?

Mimi: Mommy, I am tired. Let me sleep.

...

She walked away.

My baby girl can be very moody when she's sleepy. I know her very well.

I went to the living room.

...

Me: Hey, son.

Jaden: Hey, how are you?

Me: I am okay, thank you. How are you?

Jaden: Mother, where is Reba?

Me: She's sleeping. You will take her along with you when she's awake.

Jaden: Please talk to her for me.

Me: Why? What happened?

Jaden: She believes that she's carrying twins and she even decorated the room in the house, she decorated it for two babies. I don't want her to be disappointed.

Me: Would you have a problem if she gives birth to twins?

Jaden: Of course not but I am worried about her. She speaks about the twins as if she's carrying them.

Me: Just support her, she's your wife. Let her believe whatever she wants to believe. She might be carrying twins, we will never know until we find out.

Jaden: We are waiting for the right time, mother.

Me: That's good, son. Well, I need to go somewhere. I will be back very soon. Please look after Mimi and Reba. They are sleeping in Reba's room.

Jaden: Okay, no problem. I will sleep with them. I am very tired.

Me: Aren't you going back to work?

Jaden: No, I am not. I won't be going to work until Reba gives birth.

Me: (Smiles) Okay, son. Make yourself comfortable.

Jaden: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

I left the house.

Jaden Jones is really the best. I know and I can see that he loves Reba. What happened to everyone last year was very bad but sometimes I feel like some things had to happen in order for Reba and Jaden to meet. Rebaone Mogale-Jones is no longer in a forced marriage. She is now married to the man she loves and she is happy. What more do I want? Nothing!!! I have everything - my family's happiness is my everything.

To be continued...

47

[SOME MONTHS LATER]

[JADEN]

My wife is now seven months pregnant and her moods are on another level. Sometimes she just cries, sometimes she yells at me, sometimes she wants me all to herself and sometimes she wants nothing to do with anyone, including me. I am enduring everything because she's my wife, I love her and I understand that people deal differently with pregnancy.

...

Me: Good morning, honey.

...

I kissed her.

...

Rebaone: Hey babe, how are you?

Me: I am good thanks and you?

Rebaone: Well, I am fine. Wow, you woke up very late.

Me: I know, I am sorry.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Why are you apologizing?

Me: I promised to make delicious breakfast for you today and now look at the time.

Rebaone: It's 11:45 and it's okay honey, I made breakfast.

...

I sat down next to her.

...

Me: What are you watching?

Rebaone: It's the movie I was telling you about last night.

Me: Were you not supposed to watch it with me?

Rebaone: Don't worry, we can watch it from the start. I have not been concentrating.

Me: Okay, let me go get my food.

Rebaone: No, it's okay. I will do that for you.

Me: You are so happy today, what's going on?

...

She smiled and walked to the kitchen. Few minutes later... She came back with a tray of food.

...

Rebaone: Enjoy, baby. I prepared this with so much love.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you.

...

She gave me my breakfast and sat down next to me.

...

Rebaone: I am happy that my timetable has changed. I don't have classes on Mondays and Fridays. It's amazing, right?

Me: Yeah, it's great.

Rebaone: So you should go to work on Mondays and Fridays, baby. You can also go to work on Tuesdays, Wednesdays and Thursdays when I am at school.

Me: No, thank you.

Rebaone: Why? I am fine, baby. You have been doing a good job looking after me.

Me: I am not going to work until you give birth, Reba.

Rebaone: (Smiles) You are so stubborn.

Me: My father is taking care of everything and he tells me when he needs something. My company is doing great. I am my own boss, I don't need to be at work everyday.

Rebaone: Fine, I thought that maybe you get bored when you are always home.

Me: No, not at all. I opened a company when I was just Twenty years old and it's still doing good.

Rebaone: And it's turning five years in a month, aren't you excited?

Me: I am very excited.

Rebaone: It's turning five years on Resego's birthday. We are going to have so much fun. Two celebrations in one day. Awesome, right?

Me: Mhmm, Resego must be feeling special right now.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Yeah, you are right. It's Thuso's birthday tomorrow and Mackenzie's birthday is next week, our family is really big.

Me: Big and crazy.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Are you crazy?

Me: (Giggles) Allow me to eat my food in peace.

Rebaone: Babe, I have something to announce tomorrow.

Me: Really? What is it?

Rebaone: You will find out tomorrow. Eat your food in peace.

...

She kissed my cheek and walked away.

What does she want to announce tomorrow? She really looks happy today, she's happier than other days. What's going on? Mhmm, I can't wait to find out. Can it be tomorrow already?

...

[THE NEXT DAY - THUSO'S BIRTHDAY]

[REBAONE]

It's my little brother's birthday today and I know that he's happy. He couldn't wait for this day. He also can't wait to get gifts. The Mogales and The Jones did not celebrate birthdays last year, believe me when I say that we all didn't care about birthdays because of everything that was happening. But everything is fine now and we promised one another to always celebrate birthdays and share gifts.

I went to the living room and saw Kaden. He was so comfortable. He was having whiskey and watching TV. Who let him in? Jaden is nowhere to be seen.

...

Me: Kaden Jones.

Kaden: (Smiles) Hey, how are you?

Me: Uhm... I am fine, thank you. How are you?

Kaden: I am okay, thanks. You look stunning.

Me: Thank you. What are you doing here? The party is not here.

Kaden: I know. Jaden asked us to go with you to the party.

Me: Us? You and...?

Kaden: Bianca. She's in the bathroom right now.

Me: Mhmm, people do as they want in my house. How nice?

Kaden: (Smiles) Sorry. Are you ready to leave?

Me: You are still drinking. Hold on, where is Jaden?

Kaden: He left like a while ago.

Me: But he didn't say anything to me.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Kaden: He went to a business meeting. He didn't tell you, forgive him.

Me: It's okay. Are we taking your car?

Kaden: Yeah, we are.

Me: Okay.

...

I sat down and looked at him.

...

Kaden: What?

Me: (Smiles) You look very nice.

Kaden: I have always looked nice. Are you only seeing me today?

Me: Kaden, you look nicer than before.

Kaden: (Smiles) Really?

Me: Mhmm. Bianca is really making you happy.

...

He kept quiet. I could tell that he was blushing.

...

Me: She really loves you.

Kaden: Mhmm, I know.

Me: You also love her.

Kaden: That's true. I love her so much.

Me: You really make me happy, do you know that?

Kaden: Do I make you happy?

...

I nodded.

...

Kaden: Why do I make you happy?

Me: Just look at yourself. You are a good person and you have a heart. You have changed for the better. I am really happy.

Kaden: (Smiles) Thank you. I am also happy. I never knew happiness because I didn't want to know it. I was just always angry.

Me: I know. I know everything.

Kaden: Well, change is good.

Me: (Smiles) Indeed. Bianca is the one for you, always remember that.

Kaden: (Smiles) I will.

...

Bianca walked in.

...

Bianca: I heard my name... Oh my God, you look so beautiful, Reba.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. You also look beautiful.

Bianca: You are a very sexy pregnant woman.

Me: (Giggles) Thank you, B. We should get going.

Kaden: Yes, we should go. We don't want to be late.

Me: Exactly.

...

We left the house. Thuso's birthday party was really nice but there were so many high school kids... And their parents, of course. Well, we expected that. I went to the stage to make an announcement. It was quite late. I was waiting for Jaden for so long, he came late that's why I didn't announce the good news much earlier.

...

Me: I am happy to be standing here. My little brother looks very handsome. Well, I am not surprised, just look at me.

...

People laughed but it was a good laugh. They were agreeing with what I was saying.

I am beautiful and Mimi was right. I shouldn't wait for anyone to tell me that I am beautiful. I should just always believe. Mom taught Mimi very well.

...

Me: (Smiles) I have good news to share with all of you. I am going to keep it short because I don't want to take the spotlight. It doesn't belong to me, it belongs to Thuso. Uhm... Well, God answered my prayers. I am pregnant as you can all

see. I prayed for twins and guess what? I am really carrying twins. It's a baby girl and a baby boy. I am very happy and I am grateful to the Lord Almighty.

...

Everyone was cheering and congratulating me. I looked at Jaden and my mom. They were in tears.

...

Me: HAPPY BIRTHDAY TO YOU, THUSO. I LOVE YOU SOOOO MUCH!!! LET'S ALL HAVE FUN!!!

...

I got off the stage and Jaden was the first person to hug me. The rest followed.

...

Jaden: Congratulations, baby and thank you.

Me: No. Thank you, baby.

...

I cried with him. It was really an emotional moment for us.

Jaden's tears just melts my heart. I love this man so much. I know that I am very difficult to deal with but my Jaden is still with me through everything.

...

Me: I love you so much.

Jaden: I love you more, my dear wife and I also have good news for you.

Me: Let's go outside before everyone steals me.

Jaden: Okay.

...

We went outside and sat down on the bench.

...

Me: What's the good news, honey?

Jaden: I went to a very, very, very important business meeting. The meeting took place in a very big company. That company is one of the biggest company in South Africa.

Me: Yeah? What happened?

Jaden: That company wants to work with my company and it's going to be paying my company so much money. I still feel like I am dreaming, babe. I am so emotional right now.

Me: (Smiles) Congratulations, I am happy for you. You deserve all the good things in life, Jaden Jones and believe me when I say that God will not stop blessing you.

Jaden: Thank you so much.

...

I wiped away his tears and he also wiped away my tears.

Truly speaking, I still don't know how my prayer got answered. It's not easy to pray for twins and get twins. I just feel so blessed. My happiness can't be hidden. My husband and I are truly blessed, we have a lot to celebrate. God came through for us... AGAIN!!!

To be continued...

48

[TWO MONTHS LATER]

[JADEN]

Reba gave birth earlier today. It's my mom's birthday and my mom is happy because Reba gave birth on her birthday. Mom and my children are now sharing a birthday. It's amazing. We still haven't named the twins because there's misunderstandings. Reba wants Tswana names for the children and I want English names for the children. It's just too much. I don't know why we are failing to agree on... Oh my God, this is so annoying.

...

Kaden: Hey, what are you doing here? Aren't you supposed to be with your wife and kids?

Me: I want to clear my head. You can go inside.

Kaden: What's going on?

Me: Uhm... The names are a problem.

Kaden: What names?

Me: The children's names.

Kaden: What are their names?

Me: They don't have names yet.

Kaden: What? Were you not supposed to have the names for the children even before they were born?

Me: Well, we never agreed on names. We always fought when it comes to the names of children. I want English names for the children and Reba wants Tswana names for the children.

Kaden: Come on, is that all?

Me: Yeah.

Kaden: Why don't you give the children two names?

Me: Tswana and English?

Kaden: Yeah.

Me: That's what everyone was saying but I don't want many names for my children and Reba also does not want many names for the children.

Kaden: Two? Two names each? Tswana name and English name for the boy, Tswana and English name for the girl, is that a lot?

Me: Yes, one name is enough.

Kaden: (Laughs) Wow, you are so dramatic. Tell me, when is Reba leaving the hospital?

Me: Tomorrow.

Kaden: Okay, I am going inside. I want to see your nameless children. I am sure that they are very beautiful.

...

He laughed and walked away.

I really don't expect him to understand. But yes, he's right. My children are nameless and it's been hours. Everything has been put on hold. We need to get notice of birth from the hospital and road to health chart or whatever they call it. The children should have names already.

...

[BRIDGET]

I still don't understand why Reba and Jaden are fighting at a time like this. I didn't know that naming children would be like this to them. There's so much distance between them and I feel so bad. I hate seeing them like this.

...

Me: Reba, it's getting late. Name the children.

Rebaone: I can't go against my husband. I can't name the children without him.

Me: I will call Jaden to come inside.

Rebaone: Then what, mom?

Mavis: Reba my dear, I will convince my son to agree with you.

...

Jaden walked in.

...

Jaden: Not this time, mom. I am not going to agree with Reba. I want English names for my children and that's it.

Me: Okay, give English names to the children. We...

Rebaone: Mom, you should be siding with me. I am your daughter.

Me: I am not siding with anyone. It's getting late.

Rebaone: My children are nameless, deal with that.

Me: A name is important, honey.

Rebaone: I know but Jaden does not want our children to have names.

Jaden: That's not true. You don't want our children to have names.

Rebaone: Jaden, just leave me alone. I am so tired of arguing with you.

Jaden: I am also tired of arguing with you.

Kaden: Then name the babies. Give them two names each, it's that simple.

Me: Exactly. One Tswana name and one English name for both of them.

Jaden: It's not happening.

Rebaone: Yes, it's not happening.

Resego: Reba, why is this a big deal?

Rebaone: A name is important, Sego. You don't understand.

Resego: I understand but we all said that you should give two names to the children and...

Jaden: It's not happening, Resego. Why should the children have two names?

Mackenzie: Why can't they have two names, brother?

Denis: Yes, why can't they have two names?

Jaden: I am tired of speaking. You may all leave us.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: What? Are you chasing us away?

Jaden: Yes, you all talk too much.

Rebaone: You don't have to be rude, dear husband.

Jaden: I am not being rude, I just don't want to talk about this anymore. I am tired.

Naledi: But Jay... Uhm... The children are nameless. You should name them as soon as possible.

Jaden: Tomorrow is another day.

Naledi: But...

Rebaone: Friend, let it go. I am begging you. I don't want anyone to upset my husband. I am the only one with that right.

Jaden: True.

...

Okay, Jaden and Reba are not in good terms right now but I am happy that they still care about one another and they still love one another sooo much. I was worried for nothing. Their love is strong and they can't be separated by "baby names".

...

[FEW HOURS LATER]

We failed to change Reba and Jaden's minds. We even left the hospital.

...

Thapelo: Your children are stubborn but I didn't know that Jaden would also be this stubborn.

Me: Thank God the hospital gave us some time.

Thapelo: Yes, the hospital is not the problem. Everything is fine there but when will Reba and Jaden name the children? They are so stubborn.

...

Mimi walked in.

...

Me: Hey baby.

Mimi: Hey, mommy. When can I see my sister?

Me: Tomorrow.

Mimi: Daddy, is mommy telling the truth?

Thapelo: Yes, baby. Your sister is coming home tomorrow. She will be living with us for few months. Brother Jay will also live with us.

Mimi: (Smiles) Okay. That's very great.

Me: (Smiles) Yes, honey. It's great.

Mimi: Is she okay?

Me: Who?

Mimi: My sister.

Me: Yes, she's fine.

Mimi: So why was she taken to the hospital? Only sick people goes to the hospital.

...

We kept quiet.

...

Resego: That's not true, Cute Mimi. Reba went to get her children from the hospital.

Mimi: How? You told me that her children were inside her tummy for many months.

Resego: Yes, that's true but the hospital had to help Reba to get the children out of her.

Mimi: Are the children fat?

Me: (Giggles) No, they are not.

Mimi: (Smiles) Daddy, have you seen the children?

Thapelo: (Smiles) Yes, I have. They are so beautiful.

Mimi: Like me?

Thapelo: Yes, like you.

Mimi: (Giggles) I would like to name them. I heard that they don't have names.

Me: Who told you that?

Mimi: Thuso did. He told me everything.

Me: Mhmm, I should've known:

Mimi: I'd love to name them, please mommy.

Me: Okay. Tell us the names.

Mimi: The boy should be Jaden and the girl should be Rebaone.
I watched this other show. The parents of the new bor...bor...

...

She looked at Thuso.

...

Mimi: Please say those words again.

Thuso: New born babies.

Mimi: (Smiles) Yes. The parents of the new born babies were fighting because of names so they ended up giving the children their own names. Name sister Reba's children Rebaone and Jaden.

Me: (Smiles) Mimi, that might work. You should talk to Reba and Jaden. Is that okay?

Mimi: Mhmm... Okay mommy, I can do that. I watched the entire show. I know exactly what to say.

Resego: (Giggles) Mimi and her shows. This girl should not be watching everything on TV. It's not okay.

Mimi: But I watch nice shows. They are very interesting.

Me: Indeed. Please talk to Reba right now. I will activate the loudspeaker.

To be continued...

49

[JADEN]

I got hold of Reba's phone because Reba was still breastfeeding. I activated the loudspeaker.

...

[PHONE CONVERSATION]

Rebaone: Hey, mom.

Mimi: Hey, sister.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Oh, hey honey. How are you?

Mimi: I am fine thanks and how are you?

Rebaone: I am okay, honey. I miss you so much.

Mimi: (Giggles) I miss you too. Where is brother Jay?

Rebaone: He's here with us.

Mimi: Please give him the phone.

Rebaone: Just speak, he can hear you.

Mimi: Hey, brother Jay.

Me: (Smiles) Hey, dear. Are you good?

Mimi: Yes, I am. I miss you so much. I didn't see you today.

Me: I miss you too baby, you'll see me tomorrow.

Mimi: Do you promise?

Me: Yes, I promise.

Mimi: Is it true that you are going to live with us?

Me: Yes, it's true. Reba and I need help with the babies.

Mimi: You are a married man. You should take your wife to your parents' house and everyone there will help you with the babies.

Me: Uhm... Who told you that?

Mimi: It's something I saw on TV, brother.

Me: (Giggles) Cute Mimi, you are too much. Well, Reba wants to be with her mother when she's taking care of her first children. She'll be with my family when she's having other children.

Mimi: Other children? Really?

Me: Yes, honey.

Mimi: Okay. What's the children's names? Is it true that you don't want to name the children?

Me: Uhm... We do, it's just that... Uhm...

Rebaone: No Mimi, we...

Mimi: Who's Mimi?

Rebaone: Uhm... I'm sorry, I meant to say Cute Mimi.

Mimi: (Giggles) Okay, I forgive you. What did you want to say?

Me & Rebaone: Name our children.

...

Reba and I looked at one another.

Did we just say the same thing? Wow, we might be getting somewhere.

...

Mimi: (Giggles) Really?

Me & Rebaone: Yes, really.

...

Oh, thank you God. We are really getting somewhere.

...

Mimi: Okay. That's why I called. The boy is Jaden and the girl is Rebaone.

Me: (Giggles) Really?

Mimi: Yes.

Rebaone: Try something else, baby. We trust in you.

Mimi: What's wrong with Jaden and Rebaone?

Me: I am Jaden and my wife is Rebaone, you know that, right?

Mimi: Yes, I know but Jaden and Rebaone love one another soooo much. Are you telling me that they hate one another's names?

...

We kept quiet.

...

Mimi: Answer me.

Me: I don't hate my wife's name.

Rebaone: And I don't hate my husband's name.

Mimi: Good. You have the names.

Me: Thank you, dear. But...

Mimi: But...?

Rebaone: We can't, baby. Those names are too big for our children.

Mimi: I have an idea, mommy... Uhm... I mean sister.

Rebaone: Is mom there? Is that why you referred to me as mommy?

Mimi: Uhh... No... I am alone. I stole mommy's phone.

Rebaone: Did mom put you up to this?

Mimi: No sister, leave mommy out of this. She didn't ask me to do this. She's a nice woman. I am doing this on my own.

Rebaone: Fine. Tell me what you wanted to tell me.

Mimi: I will call you tomorrow morning and give you the names. You must take any name I give, okay?

Rebaone: Okay.

Mimi: Brother?

Me: Okay, honey. We'll accept any name from you but not Jaden and Rebaone.

Mimi: Okay. Goodnight.

Me: Goodnight. I love you.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Rebaone: Goodnight, Cute Mimi. I love you.

Mimi: (Giggles) I love you. Bye.

...

She hung up. I put the phone where I got it and looked at Reba.

...

Me: Let's make a promise to one another.

Rebaone: What is it?

Me: We will take any name Mimi gives.

Rebaone: As long as it's not Jaden and Rebaone.

Me: Yes, as long as it's not Jaden and Rebaone.

Rebaone: Sure, I don't have a problem.

Me: Our children will have names by tomorrow morning, is that okay?

Rebaone: (Smiles) Yes, babe. That's really okay.

Me: (Smiles) I love you.

Rebaone: I love you too.

...

I kissed her forehead.

...

[RESEGO]

It's good that Reba and Jaden allowed Mimi to name the children. Everything will be fine by tomorrow morning. Mimi is very smart... Between you and I, she's also smarter than the smarty pants of this house, Thuso. Thuso is the mastermind but believe me when I say that Mimi is smarter than Thuso, she

knows how to think fast and act fast and sometimes manipulation works for her. Mom taught Mimi very well, she's really a great mom.

...

Bridget: My baby, what names are you going to give to Reba and Jaden's children by tomorrow morning?

Mimi: Mommy, I will tell you tomorrow. Segó, let's go.

Me: Where?

Mimi: To my room. You will help me with the names.

Me: Okay, let's go.

...

We went to her room. She closed the door, made me sit down, gave me her coloring pencils and a book.

...

Me: What's all these for?

Mimi: Write down Jaden and Rebaone.

Me: Okay.

...

I did as I was told.

...

Me: Done.

Mimi: Write down my name.

Me: For what? You are giving me a lot of work.

Mimi: It's not a lot of work. You are lazy.

...

This little girl better know what she's doing. She's making me work like I am writing Grade Twelve final paper. She better come up with names. Why am I even writing some names right now? What is going on here?

Mimi: Are you done?

Me: Yeah.

Mimi: Segoo, we were playing "Creating Names" at creche today. It's a lovely game and it's going to help us right now.

Me: Wait, do you want us to play a game right now?

Mimi: No, I was just telling you.

Me: What's "Creating Names"? I am lost, dear.

Mimi: It's a game. You look at all the names written on the board and create one name out of them. I won so many times. My teacher had said that the names does not need to have a

meaning but they should sound nice. I really won because I think and act fast.

Me: Oh, so you know that you think and act fast?

Mimi: Yes, everybody is always telling me. Even my teacher told me.

Me: (Smiles) You are really blessed. I am happy for you. I can see where we are going now. Do you want to create one name out of the names Jaden, Rebaone and Mimi?

Mimi: Two names.

Me: Two? Not one? Really?

She smiled and nodded.

This girl is really intelligent. God, you are so nice.

Me: This is "almost" like combining names. I already get your game, baby.

Mimi: (Smiles) My name is Mimi. Take one "Mi" out of my name and think of another name that has "Mi".

Me: Uhm... Amie, with an "e" at the end.

Mimi: Wow, you are so good. Okay, write down the name "Amie".

Me: (Smiles) Sure. I am done.

Mimi: (Smiles) Add the letter "J" to "Amie" and tell me what the entire name is.

Me: Uhm... It's Jamie.

Mimi: Do the same thing with letter "R".

Me: The name is Ramie.

Mimi: Jamie is the boy's name and Ramie is the girl's name. I got the letter "J" from Jaden's name and the letter "R" from Rebaone's name. The names will be called in English and not in Tswana.

Me: The names will be pronounced in English? Baby, you did a great job. I really love what you did here but Reba does not want English names for the children.

Mimi: I know but she will accept the names when she finds out how we came up with them. Let's go tell everyone.

Me: (Smiles) Okay.

I have only seen children like Mimi on TV. I didn't know that they really exist. She's way too intelligent. Is it even normal? She's still young. How can she know so many things? She's only starting school next year. Is this normal?

To be continued...

50

[THE NEXT MORNING]

[REBAONE]

My children are so beautiful but what bothers me is that they don't have names yet. I am counting on Mimi to give me names, what is wrong with my husband and I? Mimi is a baby herself. How can we expect her to help us with names? Everyone is here to see me but obviously Mimi and Thuso are not here.

...

Me: Segogo, aren't you going to campus?

Resego: Naledi, Mackenzie and Bianca are here, why are you only talking to me about going to campus?

Me: Must you bite my head off? I know your timetable, remember? You should be at school.

Resego: Well, the lecturer is not there. I will attend the next class and I am here to see the children and play Mimi's voice note.

Me: Voice note?

Resego: Yes, I recorded her. She came up with the children's names and explained how she came up with them.

Me: (Smiles) That's good. Are they Tswana names?

Jaden: Are they English names?

Me: Jaden, stop it.

Jaden: But...

Resego: The two of you should stop it. You can't be fighting because of names. You should grow up. Listen to Mimi's voice note.

Jaden: Fine.

Me: Fine. Play it.

...

She played the recording. I was angry at first because Mimi gave English names to my children but I cried when I heard how she came up with the names.

That girl is so intelligent, sometimes she just makes me cry. I can't believe that we didn't get to be in Mimi's life for four years. It's not okay.

...

Jaden: I love the names. They are not the names I had in mind but I love how Mimi came up with them. She's amazing.

Bridget: Reba, are those tears of joy? Do you love the names?

Me: Yes mom, I love them. How can I not love the names.
Letter "J" for Jaden is there, letter "R" for Rebaone is there and
of course "Mi" for Mimi is there.

Jaden: (Smiles) Mimi is so brilliant.

...

Jaden wiped away my tears and kissed my forehead.

...

Jaden: I am okay with the names but I need you to also be okay.
Are you okay with the names, honey?

...

I smiled and nodded. Everyone was happy and finally we got
somewhere.

...

[LATER THAT DAY]

I got discharged from the hospital and I was happy to be at my
parents' house, with my husband and my children... And of
course my parents and my siblings.

...

Me: Babe, Mimi is still not back from creche. Isn't it late?

Jaden: It is. Who is picking her up today?

Me: My father... Uhm... I think.

Jaden: Well, he left the house like an hour ago.

Me: Okay. How do you feel about being here for months?

Jaden: Well, I am not used to this but it's okay. We are doing this for the children.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you for everything, babe. I love you.

Jaden: Well, this is not how you felt yesterday dear wife.

Me: Dear husband, you are such a liar. I was mad at you yesterday but I still told you that I love you.

Jaden: (Giggles) Okay, no problem. I love you more, mother of my children.

...

He kissed me.

I love this man. I am still so young, we are still young. We need our loved ones. I have never been married before but I can tell that marriage is not a joke, nor is it child's play... (Laughs) Did I just say that I have never been married before? Oh, really? How did I forget so fast? Well, it's a good thing. We are getting somewhere. We are no longer living in the past.

...

Jaden: Why are you laughing?

Me: It's nothing. I was just thinking about something.

Jaden: Wow, you are really not romantic. I am kissing you and you are laughing... Mhmm... Wow.

...

He walked out of the room.

He's full of drama. Romantic? Did he say that I am not romantic? I will show him.

...

[FEW HOURS LATER]

[JADEN]

Reba's mother is so angry. Mimi can not stop coughing. Her father took her to an ice cream shop and fed her ice cream like never before. Mimi is now sick and mother in-law just wants to kill father in-law. Mhmmm, Jaden Jones??? This is too much drama. It feels awkward. I am sitting with two people who are mad at one another. What do I do?

...

Me: Uhm... Uhh... Mother, I am going back to the room. The children must be awake, I need to help Reba.

Bridget: No son, don't go. I want you to hear everything. My husband is the reason why Mimi is sick. Couldn't he think that...

Thapelo: Why are you shouting? She wanted the ice cream. I will always give my children anything they want.

Bridget: I am not shouting. I can shout if I want but I can't do that because Mimi and my grandchildren are sleeping.

Thapelo: I will always give my children anything they want.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Bridget: Even if it's poison?

Thapelo: Are you trying to say that my children are stupid? Would they want poison?

Bridget: Thapelo, you don't want to understand what I am saying. You can't always give the children what they want. It's wrong. That's not how to raise the...

Thapelo: (Shouts) OH, ARE YOU NOW TEACHING ME HOW TO RAISE MY CHILDREN? HAVE YOU SEEN HOW HAPPY REBA IS? SHE IS STILL USING MY CARD AND SHE'S HAPPY!!!!

...

God, please get me away from these two people.

...

Bridget: (Shouts) REBA IS HAPPY BECAUSE EVERYTHING IS FINE. SHE'S NOT HAPPY BECAUSE OF YOUR BANK CARD. SHE

STOPPED USING YOUR MONEY THE DAY SHE FORGAVE YOU FOR EVERYTHING. DON'T YOU CHECK MESSAGES? YOU ARE TOO MUCH!!!!

...

They continued to argue and my mother in-law was not letting go of my hand. Is this what I signed up for?

...

[REBAONE]

Wow, did my parents have to fight like this in front of Jaden? Is this how they really want to welcome him to their house? This is so embarrassing. I know that every couple fights but this is too much. The children even woke up. My parents are yelling like mad people. I need to intervene. I know that my husband must be feeling uncomfortable wherever he is.

I went to the living room.

Oh, wow. Why is mom not letting go of my husband's hand? Does she really want him to hear everything? I was five rooms away and I heard everything, how can Jaden not hear everything when he's right next to mom? This is not what we signed up for.

...

Me: (Shouts) ENOUGH!!!

...

They all kept quiet and looked at me.

...

Bridget: Honey, what's wrong?

...

I spoke very calmly.

...

Me: Mom, let go of him.

Bridget: Who are you talking about?

Me: My husband. Let go of him.

Bridget: Oh... I didn't even realize that I am holding his hand.
(Smiles) I am sorry, son.

...

She left Jaden's hand.

...

Me: Mom, dad... You are not children. You are not going to be fighting like this here. My husband and I did not sign up for this. You all know that Jaden does not like all this noise but no, you still involved him in your fight.

Thapelo: Honey, your mother is...

Me: Enough, daddy. I don't want to know who is wrong and who is right. Just apologize to one another and let it go. You are married. Marriage is not a joke. You must always work on your marriage no matter who's wrong and who's right. Jaden and I were mad at each other yesterday but no one heard us yelling like crazy people.

Jaden: [Wow, is this my wife? She speaks like someone who has been married for years. She's taking charge of the situation. Wow, I am impressed. Her parents are now quiet.]

Me: Mom, dad... I am serious. Apologize to one another right now.

Bridget: Mimi is sick and it's because...

Me: I heard everything. I know that Mimi had too much ice cream and is now sick. Thapelo Mogale is Mimi's father just like you are Mimi's mother. Do you honestly think that your husband wanted this? He didn't mean to hurt anyone. He loves Mimi as much as you love her and I have seen his love for Mimi. Stop acting like you are the only one who loves Mimi, you know that we are in this with you. And daddy, don't ever repeat your mistake. You must put yourself in a mother's shoes before you do something like this again, got that?

Thapelo: Okay, I am sorry.

Me: You are a great man, we all love you. Your wife loves you. She's just worried about Mimi. Please understand and apologize to her, not to me.

...

He looked at mom and held her hands.

...

Thapelo: I am very sorry. I didn't mean to hurt you. I know that you care about everyone and you love everyone. Our daughter, Reba took after you. Thank you for everything and please forgive me for what I did.

Bridget: (Smiles) I forgive you. And please forgive me for everything. I also didn't mean to hurt you. Reba is right, we shouldn't be fighting like this. Marriage is not a joke. I am sorry honey, I love you.

Thapelo: (Smiles) I love you too.

...

They hugged and also apologized to Jaden and I.

...

Jaden: It's okay, I understand.

Me: We are going to our room. Jamie and Ramie are awake.

Bridget: Okay. I will come to your room in few minutes and bath the babies for you. Is that okay?

Me: (Smiles) Yes mom, it's okay. I also need to take a shower. Jaden will help you with anything you need.

Bridget: (Smiles) I love you.

Me: I love you too, mom. I really do.

Thapelo: I will check up on Mimi.

Me: Okay, dad.

Thapelo: I love you.

...

He kissed my forehead and went to Mimi's room.

I love my parents, I love my husband, I love my children, I love my siblings, I love my friends, I love my in-laws. We are not perfect, we will fight here and there but that doesn't mean we don't love one another. And as for me?? Wow, I am loving the person I am becoming. Who ever thought that my parents would listen to me and take me serious? Wow, thank you, Jesus.

To be continued...

51

[THE NEXT DAY]

[MIMI]

Sister Reba came to see me in my room and I was so happy to see her.

...

Me: (Smiles) Good morning, sister.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Good morning, baby. How are you?

Me: I am not too good. Mommy told me not to go to creche today.

Rebaone: She did a good thing. I was in your room last night and you were not there. Were you with Thuso or Resego?

Me: No, I was sleeping with mommy and daddy for the whole night.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Mhmm, that's nice. Did you have a good sleep?

Me: Yes, I did. Daddy and mommy took good care of me.

Rebaone: Okay, baby.

Me: Sister, where are the babies?

Rebaone: (Smiles) They are in my room.

Me: (Smiles) I haven't seen them. I was very sick yesterday.

Rebaone: Mhmm... I know. You didn't even eat dinner.

Me: And I am very hungry right now. Mommy did not feed me enough food.

Rebaone: (Laughs) Really?

Me: Yes, she gave me soft porridge. I don't like it.

Rebaone: What would you like to eat?

Me: Bread, cheese, bacon, fried chips, fried eggs, fish fingers, ham and juice.

Rebaone: (Smiles) You are joking, right?

Me: No.

Rebaone: (Laughs) You are a crazy girl. I will get you something to eat but not everything you mentioned.

Me: Okay, I will go to your room to see... Uhm... Sister, what are the names of the babies?

Rebaone: Take a guess.

Me: Jamie and Ramie?

Rebaone: Yes

Me: Yeeeeeeeeeeeahhhh!!! I knew that you'd never say no to the names I chose.

Rebaone: Well, they are lovely names and I love how you came up with them.

...

I hugged her and kissed her cheek.

...

Me: Thank you, sister. I love you.

Rebaone: (Smiles) I love you more.

Me: Sister, will I also smell like small babies when I have my own babies?

Rebaone: (Laughs) Why are you asking me that question?

Me: You really smell different today. You are like a baby.

Rebaone: (Giggles) Uhm... Okay. Thank you, I will take that as a compliment. Go to my room.

Me: Sister, I changed my mind.

Rebaone: About seeing the babies?

Me: No, about the food I want.

Rebaone: Oh?

Me: Yes, I'd love to eat some hake and fried chips.

Rebaone: Preparing hake will take time and I need to be busy with something else. Do you mind if I order fried chips and hake from the restaurant?

Me: While you are here?

Rebaone: Yes.

Me: And how do you do that? There's no restaurant in the house.

Rebaone: (Giggles) Leave everything to me. Technology is good.

Me: Huh?

Rebaone: (Smiles) It's okay, baby. You may go before the children sleep. They didn't sleep last night.

Me: Why?

Rebaone: Cute Mimi, just go.

Me: Okay, baby. I love you.

Rebaone: (Giggles) I love you more, my sweetheart.

...

[MAVIS]

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">I am so happy for Jaden. He's finally a father. He's Twenty Five Years Old and I believe that it's okay for him to have children at his age. I mean... He's independent and married. I am honestly happy for him.

I found Kaden in the kitchen. He prepared breakfast for everyone.

Can I please take this moment and appreciate Kaden? This son of mine was never like this. He is now good hearted and he loves everyone. He can even do some home chores without even being asked. I thank God for all my children's lives.

Everyone knows that Kaden Jones was a monster and believe me when I say that everyone can also see that Kaden Jones is now a better person. He's not perfect and it's okay. Nobody is perfect. I am just glad that everything is fine. God did not forsake us. He is so amazing, merciful, generous, loving, consistent in what he does and many more. I am grateful to him.

...

[REBAONE]

[SOME WEEKS LATER]

Being a wife, a mother, a daughter, a daughter in-law, a sister and a friend is a lot of work. School is hectic. I am under

pressure and my husband went back to work. Sometimes I just sit down and cry, it's too much. My loved ones are very helpful but the pressure still gets to me. Marriage is not a joke. I am already writing my final exams and I can't cope. It's too much. Many students were not at campus last week in order to prepare for the exams. I also studied a lot but I still feel like it's not good enough.

Jaden walked in.

He came early from work because he wants to help me with my studies. My husband is really generous.

...

Jaden: Hey, babe.

Me: (Smiles) Hey, babe. How was work?

...

He kissed me.

...

Jaden: Work was fine and how was today's exam?

Me: I don't know.

Jaden: Reba, there's nothing you can't do. You should stop doubting yourself.

Me: But I am now a wife and a mother, I have to take care of my studies, my husband and my children.

Jaden: No, we are fine and we understand that you are writing your final exams. Just study hard, pray and believe.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you. I am already feeling better.

Jaden: Where are the children?

Me: Mom went to your parents' house with them. She said that I am unable to do anything when the children are with me. She even said that I cry with them when they cry.

Jaden: (Giggles) Is she lying?

...

I kept quiet.

...

Jaden: You once told your mother that she's not the only one who loves Mimi...

Me: I know where you are going with this.

Jaden: (Smiles) Good. You are also not the only one who loves Jamie and Ramie. We all love them and please stop worrying about them and focus on your studies. I am not asking you to forget about them but please try harder to study.

Me: And why are you not telling me to forget about you?

Jaden: (Giggles) Wow, she's acting like she didn't get what I said.

Me: (Giggles) No babe, I got you. I will do my best.

Jaden: Do you promise?

Me: Yes, I promise.

Jaden: (Smiles) That's my girl. Let's study.

Me: Aren't you going to eat first?

Jaden: My wife comes first. You are doing your final year at University and I am going to help you with everything. I am going to push you until you make it.

...

Jaden just knows how to make me cry. He's so sweet. Am I not blessed to have him in my life? To have him as my husband and as my children's father?

...

Jaden: (Smiles) Why are you crying?

Me: You are good hearted and I love you.

Jaden: I knew that you'd say that. Come here.

...

He hugged me.

...

Jaden: I will never turn my back on you, I promise.

Me: I will also never turn my back on you. It's a promise.

Jaden: I love you, dear wife.

Me: I love you too, dear husband.

...

He broke off the hug and wiped away my tears.

Jaden: I am going to help you with everything. I am your husband. Things are no longer about "Me" but "us". We are in this together. Your happiness is my happiness. Your victory is my victory. Your failure is my failure. Your inner peace is my inner peace. Your troubles are my troubles. Marriage is not about "I" but "We". Do you get that, baby?

I nodded. I was in tears again.

Heartfelt words, huh? I am blessed to have Jaden Jones in my life. People like him are very rare to find. I will try my best to always be by his side.

To be continued...

[DECEMBER HOLIDAYS]

[REBAONE]

Wow, happiness is really a choice. We all chose to forget about the past and be happy. Happiness is a healer. My loved ones are amazing. We are not perfect, we fight like other people fight but we always forgive one another and be happy again. It's December holidays and my children are just two months old. My loved ones and I are celebrating the success of our families. I passed my exams, Resego and Thuso passed their exams. Naledi, Mackenzie and Bianca also passed their exams. Mimi is starting school next month and she's over the moon. What more can we ask for? NOTHING!!! We just want to celebrate. And guess what??? The Mogales, The Jones and all close friends are in Paris. Yes, we are all in Paris and we are loving it so far. We are renting a mansion in Paris and it's big enough for all of us... Uhm well, it's too big for my liking. It's never easy to find someone in this house.

I was in the kitchen when Kaden walked in on me.

...

Kaden: Why are you smiling? You are alone in the kitchen.

Me: I was just talking to myself... In my head.

Kaden: Mhmm, I see. Have you seen my girlfriend anywhere around?

Me: I am not your girlfriend's keeper. Bring my children.

Kaden: Do I have your children?

Me: Kaden, your brother told me that you took the children in the morning.

Kaden: Jaden lied to you.

...

Kaden is full of games. I heard that he's planning to become a father and he's using my children to practice how to be a father. He's too much, why can't he use dolls? Everyone is always taking my children. One minute the children are with Kaden and Bianca, the next minute they are with Resego or Thuso or Mackenzie or Jaden's parents... Just everyone. So much love? What did my children do to deserve so much love? Mhmm, it's cute.

...

Kaden: You are quiet, are you okay?

Me: Mhmm. I was just thinking about everyone.

Kaden: Please help me. Come back to life.

Me: What do you want?

Kaden: Bianca.

Me: Bianca is with Mackenzie and Naledi.

Kaden: Where?

Me: Outside.

Kaden: And where's Damien?

Me: Damien is planning today's activities with Jaden, KK and our fathers. They are somewhere in the house.

Kaden: This house is too big for my liking. You get lazy when you have to look for someone.

Me: You have a phone for a reason, Kay.

Kaden: Thanks for nothing.

...

He walked out of the house.

He's full of drama. Was he expecting me to look for the people he is looking for? In this crazy, big house? Hell no!!! He's my brother in-law and I love him so much but I won't do everything for him. He's not my husband.

Jaden walked in.

...

Me: Oh hey, you just missed Kaden.

Jaden: Really? I have been trying to call him. Where did he go?

Me: He went outside.

Jaden: Okay, that's good. We are all meeting outside in few minutes.

Me: Why?

Jaden: We are going out. Let's enjoy ourselves.

Me: And take this trip as our honeymoon.

Jaden: No, I still owe you great honeymoon. I just want the children to grow a little. We won't go with them. It's just going to be you and I.

Me: (Smiles) Okay, babe. I believe you.

Jaden: Let's join everyone outside.

Me: Sure.

...

[HOURS LATER]

We honestly had a great day. Paris is amazing. It's beautiful and it's very welcoming.

...

Mavis: We had a lovely day but it doesn't end here. You should all get ready for the party. It's going to be fun. We are also going to play games and dance.

Mackenzie: Party? What time?

Bridget: At 20:00.

Me: But it's now 19:00.

Mavis: That's why you need to get going, honey. We should get ready straight away.

Me: Where is the party taking place?

Bridget: The ship.

Me: The ship? How big?

Mimi: It's very big:

Me: Huh? Do you also know about this, Cute Mimi?

Mimi: (Smiles) Yes sister, mommy and aunt Mavis made plans. The ship is very big. We are going to have so much fun.

...

I appreciate what my mom and my mother in-law did but did they even think about me and the children? I am soooo tired and I am sure that my children are also tired of going from one place to the other. It's what we have been doing today.

...

Thapelo: Okay, we should get ready.

Denis: Yes, we should. We only have an hour:

Jaden: Reba and I will join you at 22:00:

Mimi: Why, brother?.

Jaden: We have some work to do.

Mimi: Okay.

...

My husband just saved me. I am so happy. My mom took Jaime and my mother in-law took Raime.

Everyone is helpful. They love my children so much. I can spend some time alone with my husband.

Jaden and I went to our bedroom.

...

Me: Thanks, babe.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Jaden: It's okay. I can tell that you are tired. Get some rest. You'll wake up at 21:00 and take a shower. We will join everyone at 22:00.

Me: I want us to spend time together.

Jaden: I am right here with you, I am sleeping next to you. I am also tired, honey. Let's sleep. We will wake up at 21:00, I will set the alarm.

Me: Okay, babe.

Jaden: I love you so much, don't ever forget that.

Me: I love you too, babe.

...

He kissed me and we slept.

...

[21:00]

Jaden woke me up. We took a shower together and got ready to join everyone.

...

[22:00]

We joined everyone and had so much fun with them. Believe me when I say that tears of joy were shed, hugs were shared and "I love yous" were said. Who ever thought that we would be this happy? Wow, I still feel like I am dreaming. I am soooo happy in life right now and I really want this happiness to last.

...

[THE NEXT DAY]

I still remember the day Jaden told me that I am not romantic. I don't know if this is normal but I planned something for my husband and I tonight at 19:00. I am taking my husband out tonight and I made all the arrangements. I took care of the outfits, the venue - the boat, the payments, accommodation... EVERYTHING!!! I am spoiling my husband tonight and for two more days. He will never say that I am not romantic... Again!!!

...

Jaden: Hey, babe. Everyone is gone. It's just you, me, and the twins.

Me: Yeah, it's what we wanted. I have planned something special for some days so we should spend time with the children now because we won't see them for two days.

Jaden: Huh? Two days? What have you planned?

Me: It's a surprise, honey.

Jaden: Are we not going to be here for two days?

Me: Two days or even more than two days. It'll depend on the places we are visiting.

Jaden: Uhm... But the children?

Me: They will be fine. Our loved ones will look after them.

Jaden: Uhm... But... Uhm... You are still breastfeeding. How will the children go on without milk for two or more than two days?

Me: Don't worry about that. I will pump some milk into the children's bottles. I have done it before.

Jaden: Mhmm... wow, someone wants to get romantic with me.

Me: (Smiles) Do you think that you are the only romantic one? I will show you. You will have so much fun.

Jaden: Mhmm... Okay then. I really can't wait.

Me: And don't worry about anything. I took care of everything.

Jaden: Including the payments?

...

I smiled and nodded.

...

Jaden: Wow, I am impressed.

Me: And I also bought clothes for us.

Jaden: Even for me?

Me: I said for us, so...

Jaden: Yeah. Wow, what if I won't like the clothes you bought?

Me: You will like them. I know you more than the way you know yourself.

Jaden: (Smiles) Okay, let's do this.

Me: (Smiles) Sure but for now we should focus on our small family.

Jaden: You, me and the twins.

I smiled and nodded.

[LATER THAT DAY]

[JADEN]

Wow, I can't believe that my wife did all this for me. Boat cruise??? VIP Luxury Yacht??? Wow. Seine River is truly beautiful. The boat is floating slowly down the Seine River and there's a three course gourmet meal. The city is just beautiful and the Eiffel Tower is amazing. Paris is indeed the city of love. What more can I ask for? I am with the love of my life, my other half and the mother of my children. I still can't believe that she did all this for me and with her own money. I truly feel special.

Me: Baby, thank you. I love everything.

Rebaone: (Smiles) You haven't seen it all. We'll be having fun for three more days. We are going to visit many places and many rivers but with different boats and they are all for VIPs.

Me: (Smiles) Mhmm, you beat me. I should obviously up my game.

Rebaone: For our honeymoon?

Me: Yes, for our honeymoon. I will do greater than you.

Rebaone: (Smiles) Bring it on, partner.

Me: (Giggles) I love you. Thank you. This is really relaxing.

Rebaone: Relaxing and romantic.

Me: (Smiles) True. Thank you so much.

Rebaone: (Smiles) You are welcome, babe.

We shared a kiss.

[REBAONE]

I am happy that my husband is happy. His happiness means the world to me. He can't stop taking pictures of us, of the place and he can't stop smiling and thanking me. He's obviously happy. This is the best day of my life. I used to be sad and cry a lot but God came through for me. He did it again. He has done a lot for me. I was put through horrible things last year. I was forced to be a wife to someone I didn't love but I met Jaden Jones and he showed me so much love - the love I have never seen. I believe that everything happens for a reason. Sometimes one door closes right in front of you so that another

door can open - a door of blessings. God's mercy is bigger than any mistake that we have made. Never give up in life no matter what you are going through. Forgive the people who put you through the worst and move on. "Love is patient, love is kind, it does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud, it does not dishonor others, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs." - this is what 1 Corinthians 13:4-5 says. It is simply asking you to forgive and just love. Well, truly speaking, I still love my family members so much even after what they put me through. LOVE conquers all.

.....**The End**.....

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>